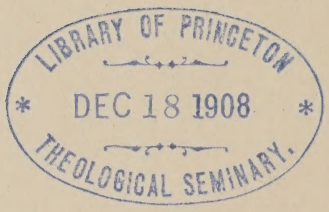
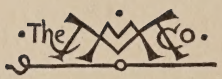
SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY

ROSS



Division HM251
Section .R82

SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY



THE MACMILLAN COMPANY
NEW YORK · BOSTON · CHICAGO
ATLANTA · SAN FRANCISCO

MACMILLAN & CO., LIMITED
LONDON · BOMBAY · CALCUTTA
MELBOURNE

THE MACMILLAN CO. OF CANADA, LTD.
TORONTO

SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY

AN OUTLINE AND SOURCE BOOK

BY

EDWARD ALSWORTH ROSS

PROFESSOR OF SOCIOLOGY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN
AUTHOR OF "SOCIAL CONTROL," "THE FOUNDATIONS
OF SOCIOLOGY," "SIN AND SOCIETY," ETC.

New York
THE MACMILLAN COMPANY
1908

All rights reserved

Copyright, 1908,
By THE MACMILLAN COMPANY.

Set up and electrotyped. Published June, 1908. Reprinted November, 1908.

Norwood Press
J. S. Cushing Co. — Berwick & Smith Co.
Norwood, Mass., U.S.A.

To

MY HONORED CO-LABORER

FRANKLIN HENRY GIDDINGS

BOLD SEEKER AND VALIANT PROCLAIMER OF TRUTH

THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED

PREFACE

It requires some hardihood to put forth this, the pioneer treatise, in any language, professing to deal systematically with the subject of social psychology. In spite of infinite pains and thirteen years of experience in university teaching of the subject, I feel sure this book is strewn with errors. The ground is new, and among the hundreds of interpretations, inferences, and generalizations I have ventured on, no doubt scores will turn out to be wrong. Of course I would strike them out if I knew which they are. I would hold back the book could I hope by longer scrutiny to detect them. But I have brought social psychology as far as I can unaided, and nothing is to be gained by delay. The time has come to hand over the results of my reflection to my fellow-workers, in the hope of provoking discussions which will part the wheat from the chaff and set it to producing an hundred fold.

Nothing puts an edge on one's thinking like coming on new and interesting truth mixed, nevertheless, with some error. Therefore, if the young science is to advance rapidly, its friends must not be too fearful of being found wrong on a few points. Let each prospector — to change the metaphor — empty out his sack of specimens before his brother prospectors, even though he knows their practised glance will recognize some of his prized nuggets as mere pyrites. Then it will not take long to locate the rich veins.

So I offer this book with the wish that what in it is sound be promptly absorbed into the growth of the science, and the unsound be as promptly forgotten. Indeed, the swiftness of its disintegration will measure the rate of progress of the subject. If it is utterly superannuated in twenty years, that will be well; if, in ten years, it is a back number, that will be better. Perish the book, if only social psychology may go forward! Hence, I beg messieurs, the discreet critics, to lay on right heartily, remembering that in showing its errors they are triumphing *with* the author, not *over* him.

At the moment of launching this work, I pause to pay heartfelt homage to the genius of Gabriel Tarde. Solicitous as I have been to give him due credit in the text, no wealth of excerpt and citation can reveal the full measure of my indebtedness to that profound and original thinker. While my system has swung wide of his, I am not sure I should ever have wrought out a social psychology but for the initial stimulus and the two great construction lines — conventionality and custom — yielded by his incomparable *Lois de l'imitation.* If only this expression of my gratitude could reach him!

EDWARD ALSWORTH ROSS.

MADISON, WISCONSIN,
May, 1908.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

PAGE

THE NATURE AND SCOPE OF SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY . . . 1

Social psychology treats of planes and currents. Relation of social psychology to sociology proper. A common environment or experience does not produce social planes. Race traits are not social planes. Such planes arise from interactions. Social psychology explains both society and the individual. Divisions. How planes of sentiment regarding slavery formed. Factors in the formation of religious planes. Imitation *vs.* Affinity.

CHAPTER II

SUGGESTIBILITY 11

The higher psychic growths imply association. Much of one's mental content comes from others. Psychic resonance. Sub-human suggestibility. Nature men. Culture men. Suggestibility in relation to age, temperament, and sex. Women more suggestible than men. In the normal state indirect suggestion succeeds best. Effect of fasting; of fatigue and hysteria. Nordau's theory. An alternative explanation. Theory of hypnotic phenomena. Normal and abnormal suggestibility. Miracle. Oriental magic. Source of suggestion — prestige. Traits of the born leader. Force *vs.* Prestige in politics. Duration of suggestion. Volume of suggestion: the secret of the might of public opinion; the fatalism of the multitude; individuality and numbers.

CHAPTER III

THE CROWD 43

Individuality and voluntary movement. Wilting of the self in the crowd. Fixation of attention. Excitement.

PAGE

Emotionalism. Arrest of thought. The leader. The psychic process in the crowd. The time element. The Kentucky Revival; its psychology. Why the crowd cannot last. Instability, credulity, irrationality, simplicity, and non-morality of the crowd. It is the lowest form of association. How deliberative assemblies escape. Mob mind in city dwellers; its bearing on booms and panics. Comparison of city and country in respect to crowd phenomena.

CHAPTER IV

MOB MIND 63

Differences between crowd and public. Ours the era of publics. Craze and fad as symptoms of mob mind. Theory of the craze. Socio-psychic phenomena in the early Church. The Children's Crusade. Mediæval epidemics. Mental epidemics in America: Millerism; the Women's Crusade; Mrs. Nation. Financial crazes; the tulip mania. Stampedes. The "Great Fear." The war spirit of '61. The laws of crazes. Theory of the fad; Faddism *vs.* Progress. Why fads flourish nowadays.

CHAPTER V

PROPHYLACTICS AGAINST MOB MIND 83

Need of building up individuality. Education for criticism. How to become crank-proof. Steadying influence of the classic. The influence of sane teachers. Avoidance of the sensational newspaper. Sport trains to inhibition. Stability of the country-bred. Familism. Sobering effect of ownership. Voluntary association disciplines men. Intellectual self-possession as an ideal. Pride or love as moral mainspring. Avoidance of yellow religion.

CHAPTER VI

FASHION 94

Outward conformity and inward conformity. The passion for self-individualization. Its persistence in American

PAGE

society. Democracy does not exclude inequality. The two movements in the fashion process. The shackling of competitive consumption; the disappearance of sumptuary laws. Effect of caste. Acceleration of the fashion process in a commercialized democracy. Why fashions less stable. The characteristics of modern fashion. The rebellion against fashion and the liberalization of costume.

CHAPTER VII

THE NATURE OF CONVENTIONALITY 110

Conventionality reaches to the very framework of our lives and furnishes postulates for our thinking. Laborers accept the upper class stigma on toil; accept the commercial standard of human worth; and of civic worth. We adopt leisure class opinion touching conservativism. Certain standards of beauty originate in leisure class snobbery. Why it is unwomanly for women to use stimulants. "The spirit of the age" is a plane established by imitation.

CHAPTER VIII

THE LAWS OF CONVENTIONALITY IMITATION 121

Bodily movements spread readily: the Flagellants; the Dancing Mania; the Jumpers; epidemics of convulsions; national gestures. Onomatopœia. The spread of dishes and drinks. Inflammability of the sex appetite. Feelings easily induced by suggestion; infectiousness of hope, fear, courage, curiosity. Unity more attainable through feelings than through beliefs. Ideal *vs.* Dogma as a religious rallying point. Seductiveness of imaginary characters; the grave responsibility of the Artist. Contagiousness of personal ideals. Sex charm follows the conventional female type; realizing a beauty ideal in the flesh. The radiation of will. Obedience draws other imitations in its wake. Tarde's law. Americanization of the Porto Ricans. Why nothing succeeds like success. Theory of survivals. Reverential imitation precedes competitive imitation. The spread of ideas precedes the spread of the arts. Why fundamental beliefs spread the farthest.

CHAPTER IX

PAGE

THE RADIANT POINTS OF CONVENTIONALITY . . . 147

Workingmen's refusal to accept certain bourgeois standards: late marriage; child emancipation. Merit may mount in defiance of social gravity. What the superior borrows from the inferior. Why colonists are conservative. Most diffusions, however, obey social gravity. The descent of wants; of culture; of manners and accomplishments; of ideals. Aristocracies the first assimilators of peoples. A live aristocracy is progressive and cosmopolitan. Why democracies must foster higher education. Differentiation of the arts and professions. Titular aristocracy as a hindrance to the diffusion of culture; the British nobility.

CHAPTER X

THE RADIANT POINTS OF CONVENTIONALITY (*continued*) . 166

The power-holder is copied; the Roman Emperor; Rome; monarchs; national imitation of court luxuries and extravagances. The imitation of the successful. Struggle between the aristocracy of achievement and the titled. The pace-setters in our democracy. Imitation of the rich by Mammon worshippers. The rise of the American dollarocracy. Barbarizing influence of the Smart Set. The spread of a pecuniary civilization.

CHAPTER XI

THE RADIANT POINTS OF CONVENTIONALITY (*concluded*) . 181

High potential of the city. The cities pass the torch to the rest of society; their spell upon the country. Capitals. Sapping of the country in monarchical France; the ascendency of Paris. The revival of local centres. Why the city has a glamour. Limits to metropolitan leadership. In democracies majorities are imitated. Among equals the greater number has prestige. The fatalism of the multitude *vs.* the leadership of the élite. The spread of ideas of equality by means of social gravity.

CHAPTER XII

PAGE

CUSTOM IMITATION 196

Contrast of custom and conventionality; of custom and heredity. Why the familiar beaten paths are pleasant. Influence of animistic ideas. *Pseudo*-scientific sanction of customs; "historical continuity." The true view. Tendency toward the formation of an etiquette in language; in ritual; in dogma; in politics; in law; in administration; in education. The arrest of progress by a cake of custom: British immobility; American immobility. Why new societies outstrip all others; the secret of the "Western" spirit.

CHAPTER XIII

CONDITIONS AFFECTING THE SWAY OF CUSTOM . . . 217

Ancestor-worship. The age of governors and leaders: China compared with revolutionary France; old men in warfare and business; old men as custodians of religion and law. Overgrowth of State and Church. Physical isolation; mountains; islands; the backwoods; effect of improved communication. Linguistic isolation. Social isolation; the Jews; guest-friendship among the Greeks. House life. Literacy. The school may be instrument either of progress or of tradition; universities as citadels of dead learning. Freedom of discussion. The supremacy of an ancient sacred book. Strong group or race feeling: no inter-assimilation among custom-bound peoples; Russian *vs.* American assimilation. Sedentariness. Culture contacts. In primitive times no contact of peoples save through war. Warfare breaks up habit and commingles the products of local developments. Familism. Dissolution of the kin group makes for individuality and initiative.

CHAPTER XIV

THE FIELDS OF CUSTOM IMITATION 254

Custom cannot thrive where there is competition. It persists in the less accessible fields. Collective habits

PAGE

more stable than individual habits. Habits of consumption more persistent than habits of production. The standard of living; ease of exploiting a custom-bound people; why unrestricted Asiatic immigration is dangerous; race suicide. Custom powerful in matters of feeling. Inter-race, inter-class, inter-confession, and inter-sex feelings resist change. Feeling not to be overcome by argument. Institutions of control slow to change. Archaism of law; of government; of organized religion.

CHAPTER XV

RELATION OF CUSTOM IMITATION TO CONVENTIONALITY

IMITATION 275

Profound contrast between a traditional and an untraditional society. Oscillations between nationalism and cosmopolitanism. When custom rules the new pretends to be old. When conventionality rules the old pretends to be new; or the old denies the newness of the new.

CHAPTER XVI

RATIONAL IMITATION 285

Attitude of the rational imitator. Relation of moral and æsthetic progress to material and intellectual progress. Rational imitation admits of authority. Rationality in the spread of the practical arts: competition; measurement; why "schools" and "movements" in the fine arts. Rationality in the spread of science: applications; verification; Science *vs.* "Thought"; why "schools" in the latter. The extensive growth of rational imitation. Its intensive growth; the rising sciences.

CHAPTER XVII

INTERFERENCE AND CONFLICT 296

Silent conflict and vocal conflict. Struggle of prestige against prestige; of prestige against merit; the conflict between old and new. Duel between merit and merit. Means of deciding silent conflicts. The appeal to author-

PAGE

ity; the case of Joseph II. The resort to persecution; the psychology of martyrdom. Why silent conflict tends to break out into discussion.

CHAPTER XVIII

DISCUSSION 307

Discussion abbreviates conflicts. Why doomed causes hate it. Curative power of free discussion. Its growing copiousness. Talk *does* change opinion. When controversy is fruitful; when fruitless. Theory of the polemic. The path of degeneration of discussion; the appeal to force. Three phases of discussion. The evolution of discussion; its secular achievements; its law of development.

CHAPTER XIX

THE RESULTS OF CONFLICT 324

Struggles may last indefinitely because of innate differences in people; or because a paradox is pitted against an illusion. Struggles may terminate because one side is beaten; because a middle ground is found; or because specialization takes place. But no struggle is settled until it is settled right.

CHAPTER XX

UNION AND ACCUMULATION 330

Two sides to every culture fabric. Rigid and plastic sides of religion; of science; of law; of industry and art. The non-accumulable elements are superior. But advance is easier on the plastic side than on the rigid. Precipitation of conflicts by the pressure of accumulated materials.

CHAPTER XXI

COMPROMISE 338

Compromise frequent in matters calling for collective action. Sometimes it breaks a social deadlock. Oftener it indicates an uncompleted conflict. Tragic feud between

PAGE

compromiser and reformer. English fondness for compromise. The Toleration Act. French *penchant* for symmetry and system. Advantages and disadvantages of compromise.

CHAPTER XXII

PUBLIC OPINION 346

The formation of public opinion in a campaign. Primary impression. The marshalling of authorities. Why independent judgment is often impossible; necessity of relying on the expert. The ascendency of the élite. Balloting a means of registering public opinion; manhood suffrage does not equalize Socrates and Sambo. Class influence in the guidance of opinion. The merging of public opinion into social tradition.

CHAPTER XXIII

DISEQUILIBRATION 355

Why an equilibrium is not reached. Disturbing influence of culture contacts; of a shifting of the social foundations; of the afflux of inventions and discoveries. No prospect of the stationary state in the Occident. The laws of invention: degrees of possibility; degrees of difficulty; how society can promote invention. A lasting equilibrium neither possible nor desirable. Contradictions in a culture not due to want of logic; putting new wine into old bottles. An epoch of disequilibration gives the individual a chance. Effect of the ripening of the social mind upon individuality: the integration of culture; the diversification of culture.

SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY

SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY

CHAPTER I

THE NATURE AND SCOPE OF SOCIAL PSYCHOLOGY

Social Psychology treats of social planes and currents

SOCIAL psychology, as the writer conceives it, studies the psychic planes and currents that come into existence among men in consequence of their association. It seeks to understand and account for those uniformities in feeling, belief, or volition — and hence in action — which are due to the interaction of human beings, *i.e.*, to *social* causes. No two persons have just the same endowment. Looking at their heredity, we should expect people to be far more dissimilar and individual than we actually find them to be. The aligning power of association triumphs over diversity of temperament and experience. There ought to be as many religious creeds as there are human beings; but we find people ranged under a few great religions. It is the same in respect to dress, diet, pastimes, or moral ideas. The individuality each has received from the hand of nature is largely effaced, and we find people gathered into great planes of uniformity.

In shifting attention from the agreements in which men rest, such as languages, religions, and cultures, to the agitations into which they are drawn, it is natural to change the metaphor from *plane* to *current*. The spread of the lynching spirit through a crowd in the presence of an atrocious criminal, the contagion of panic in a beaten

army, an epidemic of religious emotion, and the sympathetic extension of a strike call up the thought of a *current*, which bears people along for a time and then ceases.

Relation of social psychology to sociology proper

Social psychology differs from sociology proper in that the former considers planes and currents; the latter, groups and structures.[1] Their interests bring men into coöperation or conflict. They group themselves for the purpose of coöperating or struggling, and they devise structures as a means of adjusting interests and attaining practical ends. Social psychology considers them only as coming into planes or currents of uniformity, not as uniting into groups. Since the former determine the latter more than the latter determine the former, social psychology should precede rather than follow sociology proper in the order of studies.

Planes produced by a common environment or experience are not social

Social psychology pays no attention to the non-psychic parallelisms among human beings (an epidemic of disease or the prevalence of chills and fever among the early settlers of river-bottom lands), or to the psychic parallelisms that result therefrom (melancholia or belief in eternal punishment). It neglects the uniformities among people that are produced by the direct action of a common physical environment (superstitiousness of sailors, gayety of open-air peoples, suggestibility of dwellers on monotonous plains, independent spirit of mountaineers), or by subjection to similar conditions of life (dissipatedness of tramp printers, recklessness of cowboys, preciseness of elderly school teachers, suspiciousness of farmers).

[1] The present treatise is, therefore, by no means the same as *psychological sociology*, for it omits the psychology of groups. The writer doubts whether it is practicable or wise to treat the psychological side of sociology quite apart from the morphological side.

Race traits are not social planes

Social psychology ignores uniformities arising directly or indirectly out of race endowment — negro volubility, gypsy nomadism, Malay vindictiveness, Singhalese treachery, Magyar passion for music, Slavic mysticism, Teutonic venturesomeness, American restlessness. How far such common characters are really racial in origin and how far merely social is a matter yet to be settled. Probably they are much less congenital than we love to imagine. "Race" is the cheap explanation tyros offer for any collective trait that they are too stupid or too lazy to trace to its origin in the physical environment, the social environment, or historical conditions.

Social planes arise from human interactions

Social psychology deals only with uniformities due to *social* causes, *i.e.*, to *mental contacts* or *mental interactions*. In each case we must ask, "Are these human beings aligned by their common instincts and temperament, their common geographical situation, their identical conditions of life, or by their *interpsychology*, *i.e.*, the influences they have received from one another or from a common human source?" The fact that a mental agreement extends through society bringing into a common plane great numbers of men does not make it *social*. It is *social* only in so far as it arises out of the interplay of minds.

Social psychology sheds light on society

Social psychology seeks to enlarge our knowledge of *society* by explaining how so many planes in feeling, belief, or purpose have established themselves among men and supplied a basis for their groupings, their coöperations, and their conflicts. But for the processes which weave into innumerable men certain ground patterns of ideas, beliefs, and preferences, great societies could not endure. No communities could last save those held together by social pleasure or the necessity for coöperation. National

characteristics would not arise, and strife would be the rule outside of the group of men subject to the same area of characterization.

And on the individual

It seeks to enlarge our knowledge of the *individual* by ascertaining how much of his mental content and choice is derived from his social surroundings. Each of us loves to think himself unique, self-made, moving in a path all his own. To be sure, he finds his feet in worn paths, but he imagines he follows the path because it is the right one, not because it is trodden. Thus Cooley [1] observes: "The more thoroughly American a man is, the less he can perceive Americanism. He will embody it; all he does, says, or writes will be full of it; but he can never truly see it, simply because he has no exterior point of view from which to look at it." Now, by demonstrating everywhere in our lives the unsuspected presence of social factors, social psychology spurs us to push on and build up a genuine individuality, to become a voice and not an echo, a person and not a parrot. The realization of how pitiful is the contribution we have made to what we are, how few of our ideas are our own, how rarely we have thought out a belief for ourselves, how little our feelings arise naturally out of our situation, how poorly our choices express the real cravings of our nature, first mortifies, then arouses, us to break out of our prison of custom and conventionality and live an open-air life close to reality. Only by emancipation from the spell of numbers and age and social eminence and personality can ciphers become integers.

Divisions of social psychology

Social psychology falls into two very unequal divisions, viz., *Social Ascendency* and *Individual Ascendency*, the determination of the one by the many and the determina-

[1] "Human Nature and the Social Order," 36.

tion of the many by the one; the moulding of the ordinary person by his social environment and the moulding of the social environment by the extraordinary person. Thus the knightly pattern, the ideal of romantic love, the Westminster Catechism, and the belief in public education are at once achievements of superior persons, and elements in the social environment of innumerable ordinary persons.

For example, we may distinguish three principal sources of the feelings on slavery extant in this country in 1860.

How planes of sentiment regarding slavery formed

1. *Observation or Experience of Slave Holding.* — In the South slavery was profitable, and the economic interests of that section became bound up with it. In the North it was unprofitable, and hence men could feel disinterestedly about it.

2. *Imbibing from the Social Environment.* — In the South belief in the rightfulness of slavery became first a creed and then a tradition under which the young grew up. During the seventy years from 1790 to 1860 there was a marked increase of antipathy to the negro and an extension of the color line. By 1835 pro-slavery sentiment had become so militant that abolitionism was no longer allowed to show itself openly. The generation reared in this close atmosphere could not but be biassed. Southern opinion became first homogeneous, then imperious, finally intolerant. Southern feeling about slavery reached the pitch of fanaticism. Even the "poor whites" became pro-slavery. In the North antislavery sentiment became predominant, but not intolerant. In each section there formed a psychic vortex, more and more powerful, which sucked in the neutral and indifferent and imparted to them its own motion.

3. *The Initiative of the Élite.* — In the South the public

men, great planters, and commercial magnates moulded sectional opinion in support of the "peculiar institution." In the North poets, divines, orators, philosophers, and statesmen built up the antislavery sentiment. Garrison, Phillips, Parker, Lovejoy, Stowe, Beecher, Lowell, Thoreau, and Whittier proclaimed the mandates of the voice within the heart.

Of these three factors the first is not social at all, the second exemplifies *social ascendency*, and the third exemplifies *individual ascendency*.

Factors in the formation of religious planes

Again, to drive the distinction home, let us consider the factors that determine the boundary line between Catholicism and Protestantism in Europe.

1. *The Affinity between the Confessions and the People.* — Says Taylor:[1] —

"The dolichocephalic Teutonic race is Protestant, the brachycephalic Celto-Slavic race is either Roman Catholic or Greek Orthodox. In the first, individualism, wilfulness, self-reliance, independence, are strongly developed; the second is submissive to authority and conservative in instincts. To the Teutonic races Latin Christianity was never congenial, and they have now converted it into something very different from what it was at first, or from what it became in the hands of Latin and Greek doctors. The Teutonic peoples are averse to sacerdotalism, and have shaken off priestly guidance and developed individualism. Protestantism was a revolt against a religion imposed by the South upon the North, but which had never been congenial to the Northern mind. The German princes, who were of purer Teutonic blood than their subjects, were the leaders of the ecclesiastical revolt. Scandinavia is more

[1] "The Origin of the Aryans," 247–249.

purely Teutonic than Germany, and Scandinavia is Protestant to the backbone. The Lowland Scotch, who are more purely Teutonic than the English, have given the freest development to the genius of Protestantism. Those Scotch clans which have clung to the old faith have the smallest admixture of Teutonic blood. Ulster, the most Teutonic province of Ireland, is the most firmly Protestant. The case of the Belgians and the Dutch is very striking. The line of religious division became the line of political separation, and is conterminous with the two racial provinces. The mean cephalic index of the Dutch is 75.3, which is nearly that of the Swedes and the North Germans; the mean index of the Belgians is 79, which is that of the Parisians. The Burgundian cantons of Switzerland, which possess the largest proportion of Teutonic blood, are Protestant, while the brachycephalic cantons in the East and South are the stronghold of Catholicism. South Germany, which is brachycephalic, is Catholic; North Germany, which is dolichocephalic, is Protestant. Hanover, which is Protestant, has a considerably lower index than Cologne, which is Catholic. The Thirty Years' War was a war of race as well as of religion, and the peace of Westphalia drew the line of religious demarcation with tolerable precision along the ethnic frontier.

"Wherever the Teutonic blood is purest — in North Germany, Sweden, Norway, Iceland, Ulster, the Orkneys, the Lothians, Yorkshire, East Anglia — Protestantism found easy entrance, and has retained its hold, often in some exaggerated form. In Bohemia, France, Belgium, Alsace, it has been trodden out. In Galway and Kerry it has no footing. The Welsh and the Cornishmen, who became Protestants by political accident, have trans-

formed Protestantism into an emotional religion, which has inner affinities with the emotional faith of Ireland and Italy. Even now Protestantism gains no converts in the South of Europe, or Catholicism in the North. Roman Catholicism, or the cognate creed of the Greek and Russian Orthodox churches, is dominant in all those lands where the brachycephalic race prevails; Protestantism is confined to the dolichocephalic Teutonic region."

2. *The Initiative of Religious Leaders.* — The work of Huss, Luther, Knox, Calvin, was, of course, a decisive factor in the formative years of Protestantism. It is less to-day, seeing that the teachings of the earlier leaders have struck root and become a tradition. Nevertheless, even now, the frontier between the confessions is disturbed by the shifting of a Newman from one side to the other.

3. *The Authority of Numbers and Tradition.* — Only the very independent mind turns Catholic in Scandinavia, where all but one in a thousand are Lutheran, or Protestant in Portugal, where all but one in ten thousand are Catholic. In religion, moreover, parental upbringing is well-nigh decisive. Save among migrants, few converts are made by one side from the other. Every man denies that his faith is inherited or thrust upon him by circumstances. On the contrary, he imagines that it is a matter of intelligent free choice. But this is an illusion. The recognized ascendency of remote historical factors in determining the religious preferences of peoples emphasizes how non-rational and unfree are the religious adhesions of men. The Irish are devotedly and stubbornly Catholic because their aforetime oppressors were Protestants. Not present causes, but Smithfield, the Armada, Knox, and Claverhouse, make England so Protestant,

Scotland so Presbyterian. Long-forgotten struggles with non-Christians made Spain so bigoted as she is to-day, and Russia so Orthodox.

Imitation versus Affinity as establisher of planes among men

The second and third of these determinative factors are social, but not the first. It is evident, then, that the great rival to Imitation as the key to social uniformities is Affinity. Thus it has been maintained that there is an inner sympathy between agriculture and orthodoxy, between commerce and heresy, between machine industry and scepticism, between artists and socialism.

The affinities or suitabilities that govern choices present themselves more clearly in races than in peoples, in peoples than in communities, in communities than in individuals. Thus great numbers of individuals are Catholic from some form of imitation, yet the brachycephalic race seems to be Catholic from affinity. Innumerable persons wear tweeds and cheviots on account of fashion, yet the ultimate reason for the vogue of these stuffs is their suitability to certain damp chill climates. Despite the mob mind in them, the Crusades display a good deal of rationality. They were expeditions for the conquest of powerful talismans. There is probably an *affinity* between parliamentary institutions and the English-speaking peoples on their present plane of culture. The frequent illworking of such institutions in southern Europe and South America suggests that among the Latins they persist by *imitation*.

SUMMARY

Social psychology treats of the psychic planes and currents that arise in consequence of human association.

It does not consider common race traits nor pyschic uniformities

produced by the direct action of the physical environment or by exposure to similar conditions of life.

Its phenomena may be considered under the heads of Social Ascendency and Individual Ascendency.

A wide uniformity in belief, practice, or institution is either the manifestation of an affinity or the outcome of imitation.

EXERCISES

1. Social psychology has been defined as "the genesis of those states of consciousness produced in the individual by the presence of and contact with his fellows." How does this notion differ from that given in the text?

2. Show that the phenomena grouped under Individual Ascendency do not so lend themselves to generalization as the phenomena grouped under Social Ascendency.

CHAPTER II

SUGGESTIBILITY

The older psychology was individualistic in its interpretations. The contents of the mind were looked upon as elaborations out of personal experience. It sought to show how from the primary sense perceptions are built up ideas, at first simple, then more and more complex — ideas of space, time, number, cause, etc. The upper stories of personality, framed on beliefs, standards, valuations, and ideals, were comparatively neglected. The psychologist failed to note that for these highly elaborated products we are more indebted to our fellow-men than to our individual experience, that they are wrought out, as it were, collectively, and not by each for himself.

The higher psychic growths imply association

The newer psychology in accounting for the contents of the mind gives great prominence to the social factor. It insists that without interaction with other minds the psychic development of the child would be arrested at a stage not far above idiocy. Such interaction arises necessarily from the suggestibility of human nature. A person cannot unswervingly follow the orbit prescribed by his heredity or his private experience. He does not sit serene at the centre of things and coolly decide which of the examples and ideas that present themselves he shall adopt. Much of what impinges on his consciousness comes with some force. It has momentum, and if he does not yield

Much of one's mental content comes from others

to it, it is because his mind resists with a greater force. The weak mind, like Sir James Brooke in "Middlemarch," "takes shape easily, but won't keep shape." Many a man thinks he makes up his mind, whereas, in truth, it is made up for him by some masterful associate or by the man who talked with him last.

Psychic resonance

Stimuli welling up from within may be termed *impulses*, whereas those reaching us directly from without may be termed *suggestions*. The latter may be defined as "the abrupt entrance from without into consciousness of an idea or image which becomes a part of the stream of thought and tends to produce the muscular and volitional effects which ordinarily follow upon its presence." [1] Examples of the working of suggestion are legion. Persons accustomed to being put under the influence of anæsthetics have "gone off" as soon as the familiar chloroform mask was laid on the face, but before any chloroform had been poured on it. A professor of chemistry announced to his auditors: "The bottle which you see before me contains a chemical with a strong and peculiar odor. I wish to see how rapidly the odor will be diffused through the air and will therefore ask each of you to raise the hand as soon as the odor is perceived." With face averted he then poured the liquid over some cotton and started a stop watch. In fifteen seconds most of those in the front row had given the sign, and by the end of a minute three-fourths of the audience claimed to perceive the smell. Yet the bottle contained nothing but distilled water, and the professor had been measuring the power of suggestion and not the diffusibility of an odor! [2]

[1] Baldwin, "Handbook of Psychology," II, 297.
[2] *Psychological Review*, VI, 407.

Suggestions are true forces and enact themselves unless they meet resistance. The power to withstand, ignore, or throw off suggestions is one form of *inhibition*, *i.e.*, will power. Suggestion and imitation are merely two aspects of the same thing, the one being cause, the other effect.

Suggestibility varies according to, —

Suggestibility at sub-human levels

1. *Species.* — It appears to be more marked in gregarious than in solitary creatures. Not all simians are imitative, but the gregarious simians, the monkeys, are proverbially so. Sheep are so imitative that if a file of them be driven through a narrow passage and the leader be made to jump over a stick held across the passage, every one of the file will jump at that place, even if the stick be withdrawn. Only high suggestibility could produce the wonderful instantaneous concert of action seen in the herd of deer or buffalo, the band of wild horses or elephants.

The waxen mind of nature men

2. *Race.* — Suggestibility is not a weakness produced by civilization. We are told that if Samoyeds be sitting about inside their skin tents in the evening and some one creeps up and strikes the tent with his hand, half of them are likely to fall into cataleptic fits. Recent investigations show this nervous instability to be very widespread among the Siberian tribes. We are assured that among the Malays prevails *lâtah*, an uncanny disorder which would be expected of the high-strung nervous systems of ultra-refined Europeans rather than of artless, unsophisticated children of nature like the Malays. Once you have the attention of *lâtah*-struck persons, "by merely looking them hard in the face, they will fall helpless into the hands of the operator, instantly lose all self-control, and go passively through any performance, whether ver-

bally imposed or merely suggested by a sign." [1] The Chinaman, so phlegmatic that he is said to be able to sleep "lying across a wheelbarrow with his mouth open and a fly buzzing inside his mouth," suffers, nevertheless, from nervous instability. In the interior of China in almost every village there develop many cases of auto-suggestion, which pass for demoniac possession. "The most striking characteristic of these cases is that the subject evidences another personality, and the normal personality for the time being is partially or wholly dormant." [2]

The American Indian, far from being impassive, is an extremely susceptible type. The ghost-dance religion that spread among the Indians, 1889–1892, took possession of probably sixty thousand souls. Its central feature was a sacred dance, reënforced by hypnotizing operations by the medicine man upon dancers who began to show signs of ecstasy. Under the power of the emotion and of the passes employed by the medicine man, first one and then another would break from the ring, stagger, and fall down. "They kept up dancing until fully one hundred persons were lying unconscious. Then they stopped and seated themselves in a circle, and as each one recovered from his trance, he was brought to the centre of the ring to relate his experience." [3]

Differences among culture men

Among the civilized races the Celto-Slavs seem to be more suggestive than the English or the Scandinavians. The demonstrativeness of French and Italian audiences is in high contrast to the "phlegm" of English and Ger-

[1] Quoted from Swettenham by Keane, "Man, Past and Present," 236.
[2] Nevius, "Demon Possession," 144.
[3] Fourteenth Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology, 917.

man audiences. Nothing surpasses the fire and dash of a French cavalry charge. The English are at their best in individualistic fighting, such as defence or retreat. The French and Irish orators hold the palm, while it is the mobs of Frenchmen and of Russians that yield the best material for crowd psychology. Mesmerism and, later, hypnotism originated in France. Politeness and the refinements of intercourse are well-nigh spontaneous with the Irish and the French, owing to their quick susceptibility to slight indications of feeling in the other person. The rudeness so often complained of in the English seems due to an insensitiveness to certain ranges of suggestion.

Why the child is "plastic"

3. *Age.* — Suggestibility is at its maximum in young children, and it is said that most children above the age of seven are hypnotizable.[1] Here is the secret of childhood's "plasticity." The adult may be progressive, *i.e.*, open to new ideas, but he ought not to be plastic, *i.e.*, shaped readily by whatever happens to impinge on him. Juvenile testimony is very untrustworthy, seeing that by a series of skilful leading questions a child may be led to give almost any desired story on the witness-stand. It is the suggestibility of the young that prompts us to segregate youthful offenders, institute juvenile courts, keep vicious women off the street, penalize the dissemination of obscene literature, outlaw "treating," and eliminate the commercial motive from the sale of liquor.

Temperament

4. *Temperament.* — Coe[2] finds those of the sanguine or the melancholic temperament decidedly more suggestible than the choleric. Of seventeen persons who from their

[1] Binet, "La Suggestibilité," sets forth investigations showing a marked normal suggestibility in school children.

[2] "The Spiritual Life," 120.

upbringing had come to expect a striking religious transformation and did experience it (suggestibles), twelve were predominated by sensibility, two by intellect, and three by will. For twelve persons who looked for a conversion but failed to experience it (spontaneous), the corresponding figures are two, nine, and one.

Women more suggestible than men

5. *Sex.* — Among the Indian ghost-dancers, "young women are usually the first to be affected, then older women, and lastly men." Coe finds that among those who definitely seek for a striking religious transformation, the proportion of those whose expectation is completely satisfied is decidedly greater among the women. Starbuck's figures,[1] showing six times as many women as men converted at the regular church services, indicates the greater response of women to external suggestion. In conversion "men display more friction against surroundings, more difficulty with points of belief, more doubt arising from educational influences, more readiness to question traditional beliefs and customs, more pronounced tendency to resist conviction, to pray, to call on God, to lose sleep and appetite." For them the period of doubt and struggle is longer than for women. Ellis [2] points out that women are more hypnotizable than men. In every hypnotic clinic women are in a great majority. One authority avers that two-thirds of hysterical women and only one-fifth of hysterical men can be hypnotized. Of 360 persons successfully treated by hypnotic therapeutics in a given time 265 were women, 45 were children, and only 50 were men. Hysteria, the mental side of which is exaggerated suggestibility, is much more common in women than in men. Women make

[1] *American Journal of Psychology*, VIII, 271.
[2] "Man and Woman," ch. XII.

the best mediums. In the Middle Ages witches were estimated to be fifty times as frequent as wizards. As religious leaders women have been conspicuous in that part of religion which covers the field of hypnotic phenomena. In women the stirrings of the inferior nervous centres are not so firmly controlled by the supreme centre as in man. Hence they are at once more suggestible and more emotional.

Women dwarfed by being held in tutelage

The mob susceptibilities in woman cause many strongly to oppose granting women more power in our social or political organization. But women are more than a sex. They are, in a sense, a social class shut out from many of the bracing and individualizing experiences that come to men. "Nowhere in the world," declares Professor Thomas,[1] "do women as a class lead a perfectly free intellectual life in common with the men of the group unless it be in restricted and artificial groups like the modern revolutionary party in Russia." Hence *woman* is by no means synonymous with *human female.* Almost everywhere propriety and conventionality press more mercilessly on woman than on man, thereby lessening her freedom and range of choice and dwarfing her will. Individuality develops through practice in choosing. If women are mobbish, it is largely for the same reason that monks, soldiers, peasants, *moujiks*, and other rigidly regulated types are mobbish. Much of woman's exaggerated impressionability disappears once she enjoys equal access with men to such individualizing influences as higher education, travel, self-direction, professional pursuits, participation in intellectual and public life.

[1] "Sex and Society," 311.

In the normal state indirect suggestion succeeds best

6. *Mental Condition.* — In the normal mental state distraction, *i.e.*, absence of mind, is favorable to the uncritical acceptance of suggestion. The mind must be "caught napping," as it were, in order that an uncongenial suggestion may find lodgment. A number of students are hard at work in the laboratory, absent-mindedly whistling a popular air. An experimenter is able at will to lead their whistling through a medley of well-known airs without their being in the least aware of it. Owing to the absence of his hired men a well-to-do farmer is burdened one evening with the task of milking his sixteen cows. The conclusion of his work at midnight finds him in a "brown study" over a philosophic problem. He takes the eight pails of milk and empties them, one after another, into the swill barrel, coming to realize what he is doing only as he drains the last pail! The "feel" of the full milk-pails had suggested "swill barrel," for one of his daily "chores" was the disposal of skim milk. An absent-minded professor is directed by his wife after dinner to go upstairs and change his clothes preparatory to receiving callers. On going in search of him after the callers have left, she finds him asleep in bed. Undressing had suggested "bed," and bed had suggested "sleep." After an absorbing discussion in a group of smokers a man who finds one cigar enough discovers he has smoked four cigars. The cigars in the open box on the table virtually suggested "Take me!"

By one in the normal state, then, slantwise suggestion is far more likely to be accepted than direct suggestion, on the principle that a flank movement succeeds when a frontal attack fails. The young man who has broken with his old habits and associates may be drawn into the saloon

again by the suggestion from a chance-met former crony, "Let's sit down somewhere and talk over old times," when he would have declined the invitation, "Come and let's have a drink." Shakespeare understood the efficacy of indirect suggestion. The subtlety of Iago consists in his sliding suspicion into Othello's mind without drawing attention upon himself. In Scene III of Act III Othello and Iago enter, and Cassio, who has been beseeching Desdemona to get him forgiven for his escapade, withdraws, too shame-faced to meet his commander. At this Iago exclaims as if to himself, —

"Ha! I like not that.
Oth. What dost thou say?
Iago. Nothing, my lord: or if — I know not what.
Oth. Was not that Cassio parted from my wife?
Iago. Cassio, my lord! No, sure, I cannot think it;
That he would steal away so guilty like,
Seeing you coming."

When they are left alone after Desdemona's successful intervention on Cassio's behalf, Iago, with every appearance of reticence, contrives to scatter fresh seeds of suspicion in his master's soul.

"*Iago.* My noble lord, —
Oth. What dost thou say, Iago?
Iago. Did Michael Cassio, when you woo'd my lady,
know of your love?
Oth. He did, from first to last: why dost thou ask?
Iago. But for a satisfaction of my thought;
No further harm.
Oth. Why of thy thought, Iago?

Iago. I did not think he had been acquainted with her.
Oth. O, yes, and went between us very oft.
Iago. Indeed!
Oth. Indeed! Ay, indeed; discern'st thou aught in that?
Is he not honest?
Iago. Honest, my lord?
Oth. Honest, ay, honest.
Iago. My lord, for aught I know.
Oth. What dost thou think?
Iago. Think, my lord!
Oth. Think, my lord!
By heaven, he echoes me
As if there were some monster in his thought
Too hideous to be shown. Thou dost mean something;
I heard thee say but now, thou likest not that,
When Cassio left my wife: What didst not like?
And when I told thee how he was in my counsel
In my whole course of wooing, thou criedst, "Indeed!"
And didst contract and purse thy brow together,
As if thou hadst shut up in thy brain
Some horrible conceit: If thou dost love me,
Show me thy thought.
Iago. My lord, you know I love you.
Oth. I think thou dost.
And for I know thou'rt full of love and honesty
And weigh'st thy words before thou givest them breath,
Therefore these stops of thine fright me the more:
For such things in a false disloyal knave
Are tricks of custom; but in a man that's just
They're close dilations working from the heart,
That passion cannot rule.
Iago. For Michael Cassio

I dare be sworn I think that he is honest.

Oth. I think so too.

Iago. Men should be what they seem;
Or those that be not, would they might seem none!

Oth. Certain, men should be what they seem.

Iago. Why then I think Cassio's an honest man.

Oth. Nay, yet there's more in this;
I prithee, speak to me as to thy thinkings,
As thou dost ruminate, and give thy worst of thoughts
The worst of words."

In like manner, by indirect suggestion, veering more and more to direct suggestion as they come under his sway, Mark Antony stirs up the Roman populace against the "honorable men" who have slain Cæsar.

Fasting heightens susceptibility to hallucination and suggestion. The universally recommended regimen for hearing voices, experiencing ecstatic states, and "seeing God" is fasting. There was an ancient saying, "The stuffed prophet shall not see or know secret things." The Indian boy about the time of puberty fasts till he is vouchsafed a vision of his "Manitou." In the earlier days the negro "seekers" fasted in order to experience "conversion." Savage peoples employ fasting, solitude, and physical exhaustion induced by watching, dancing, whirling, shouting, or flagellation, to bring on abnormal states in which suggestibility is extreme. The preternatural resonance of the half-starved human being has long been counted a sign of divine afflatus, and the full-fed healthy man of stable mentality has humbled himself before the emaciated seer of visions and dreamer of dreams.

Fasting heightens suggestibility

Fatigue and hysteria

Overstimulation brings on fatigue and a heightening of suggestibility. Nordau accounts as follows for the prevalence in our time of decadent schools and movements in art and literature.

"The leading characteristic of the hysterical is the disproportionate impressionability of their psychic centres. From this primary peculiarity proceeds a second quite as remarkable and important — the exceeding ease with which they can be made to yield to suggestion. The earlier observers always mentioned the boundless mendacity of the hysterical . . . they were mistaken. The hysterical subject does not consciously lie. He believes in the truth of his craziest inventions. The morbid mobility of his mind, the excessive excitability of his imagination, conveys to his consciousness all sorts of queer and senseless ideas. He suggests to himself that these ideas are founded on true perceptions, and believes in the truth of his foolish inventions until a new suggestion — perhaps his own, perhaps that of another person — has ejected the earlier one. A result of the susceptibility of the hysterical subject to suggestion is his irresistible passion for imitation, and the eagerness with which he yields to all the suggestions of writers and artists. When he sees a picture, he wants to become like it in attitude and dress; when he reads a book, he adopts its views blindly. He takes as a pattern the heroes of the novels which he has in his hand at the moment, and infuses himself into the characters moving before him on the stage." [1]

"When a hysterical person is loudly and unceasingly assured that a work is beautiful, deep, pregnant with the future, he believes in it. He believes in everything sug-

[1] "Degeneration," 25, 26.

gested to him with sufficient impressiveness. When a little cow girl, Bernadette, saw the vision of the Holy Virgin in the grotto of Lourdes, the woman devotees and hysterical males of the surrounding country who flocked thither did not merely believe that the hallucinant maiden had herself seen the vision, but all of them saw the Holy Virgin with their own eyes. M. E. de Goncourt relates that in 1870, during the Franco-Prussian War, a multitude of men, numbering tens of thousands, in and before the Bourse in Paris, were convinced that they had themselves seen — indeed, a part of them had read — a telegram announcing French victories fastened to a pillar inside the Exchange, and at which people were pointing with the fingers; but as a matter of fact it never existed. It would be feasible to cite examples by the dozen of illusions of the senses suggested to excited crowds. Thus the hysterical allow themselves without more ado to be convinced of the magnificence of a work, and even find in it beauties of the highest kind, unthought of by the authors themselves and the appointed trumpeters of their fame.[1]

Nordau's theory of latter-day hysteria

"The enormous increase of hysteria in our days is partly due . . . to the fatigue of the present generation. . . . Fatigue constitutes a true temporary experimental hysteria. . . . One can change a normal into a hysterical individual by tiring him.[2] . . . Now, to this cause — fatigue

[1] *Ibid.*, 32–33.

[2] "Suggestibility from exhaustion or strain is a rather common condition with many of us. Probably all eager brain workers find themselves now and then in a state where they are 'too tired to stop.' The overwrought mind loses the healthy power of casting off its burden, and seems capable of nothing but going on and on in the same painful and futile course. One may know that he is accomplishing nothing, that work done in such a state of mind is always bad work, and that 'that

— which, according to Féré, changes healthy men into hysterical, the whole of civilized humanity has been exposed for half a century. All its conditions of life have, in this period of time, experienced a revolution unexampled in the history of the world. Humanity can point to no century in which the inventions which penetrate so deeply, so tyrannically, into the life of every individual are crowded so thick as in ours. The discovery of America, the Reformation, stirred men's minds powerfully, no doubt, and certainly also destroyed the equilibrium of thousands of brains which lacked staying power. But they did not change the material life of man. He got up and lay down, ate and drank, dressed, amused himself, passed his days and years as he had always been wont to do. In our times, on the contrary, steam and electricity have turned the customs of life of every member of the civilized nations upside down, even of the most obtuse and narrow-minded citizen, who is completely inaccessible to the impelling thoughts of the times." [1] "The humblest village inhabitant has to-day a wider geographical horizon, more numerous and complex intellectual interests, than the prime minister of a petty, or even a second-rate, state a century ago. A cook receives and sends more letters than a university professor did formerly, and a petty tradesman travels more and sees more countries and people than did the reigning prince of other times. All these activities, however, even the simplest, involve an effort of the nervous

way madness lies,' but yet be too weak to resist, chained to the wheel of his thought, so that he must wait till it runs down. And such a state, however induced, is the opportunity for all sorts of undisciplined impulses, perhaps some gross passion, like anger, dread, the need of drink, or the like." — Cooley, "Human Nature and the Social Order," 41.

[1] *Ibid.*, 36, 37.

system and a wearing of tissue. Every line we read or write, every human face that we see, every conversation we carry on, every scene we perceive through the window of the flying express, sets in activity our sensory nerves and our brain centres. Even the little shocks of railway travelling, not perceived by consciousness, the perpetual noises, and the various sights in the streets of a large town, our suspense pending the sequel of progressing events, the constant expectation of the newspaper, of the postman, of visitors, cost our brains wear and tear. In the last fifty years the population of Europe has not doubled, whereas the sum of its labors has increased tenfold, in part even fifty fold. Every civilized man furnishes, at the present time, from five to twenty-five times as much work as was demanded of him half a century ago." [1]

"In the last twenty years a number of new nervous diseases have been discovered and named. They are exclusively a consequence of the present conditions of civilized life. Many affections of the nervous system already bear a name which implies that they are a direct consequence of certain influences of modern civilization. The terms 'railway-spine' and 'railway-brain,' which the English and American pathologists have given to certain states of these organs, show that they recognize them as due . . . partly to the constant vibrations undergone in railway travelling. Again, the great increase in the consumption of narcotics and stimulants has its origin unquestionably in the exhausted systems with which the age abounds." [2]

An alternative explanation

The writer doubts the soundness of Nordau's interpretation. It is more likely that the literary and æsthetic

[1] *Ibid.*, 39. [2] *Ibid.*, 40, 41.

crazes of our time are connected with the collapse of time-hallowed authorities, are a part of the price we pay to ransom our souls from the spell of the past. Innumerable minds have parted their moorings to tradition before acquiring rudder and steering-wheel. What, then, can be their fate but to drift about helplessly or founder miserably in the cross currents of our age!

Theory of hypnotic phenomena

In the hypnotic trance suggestibility is greatly enhanced, and direct suggestion succeeds best. Hypnotism has been so fully exploited that I shall not dilate here upon the marvellous obedience of the subject to the will of the operator, nor enlarge upon the significance of retroactive and post-hypnotic suggestions. Probably the most rational notion of what really takes place in hypnosis is that given by Sidis.[1] "Abnormal suggestibility is a disaggregation of consciousness, a slit, a scar, produced in the mind, a crack that may extend wider and deeper, ending at last in the total disjunction of the waking, guiding, controlling consciousness from the reflex consciousness, from the rest of the stream of life." In normal suggestibility "the lesion effected in the body of consciousness is superficial, transitory, fleeting. In abnormal suggestibility, on the contrary, the slit is deep and lasting — it is a severe gash. In both cases, however, we have a removal, a dissociation of the waking from the subwaking, reflex consciousness, and suggestion being effected only through the latter. *It is the subwaking, the reflex, not the waking, the controlling consciousness that is suggestible. Suggestibility is the attribute, the very essence of the subwaking, reflex consciousness.*"

[1] "The Psychology of Suggestion," 88, 89.

Suggestibility in the normal and in the abnormal state

In the normal state suggestion should be as indirect as possible in order to catch the inhibitory, waking consciousness "off its guard." In the abnormal state no circumspection is needed; the controlling inhibitory, waking consciousness is more or less dormant, the subwaking, reflex consciousness is exposed, and our suggestions are more effective the more direct they are. "Suggestion varies as the amount of disaggregation, and inversely as the unification of consciousness."

The integral self and the sub-selves

The primary self is the self with personality and will. It is, as it were, a synthesis of all one's experience. It alone embodies the results of reflection, and it alone holds life true to a personal ideal. It is the captain of the ship. When it is able to fight back the mutinous crew that swarm up from the forecastle — the appetites and passions — and to hold the ship to her course in spite of side-winds and cross currents — suggestions from without — we have a character. If, now, this primary self is overthrown or put to sleep, the subwaking self becomes master of the ship. This self has little reason, will, or conscience. It has sense, appetite, emotion, intelligence, but not character. It is imitative, servile, credulous, swung hither and thither by all sorts of incoming suggestions. The life it prompts cannot be stable, self-consistent, integrated. It is low on the scale of personality, and a situation that commits to its hands the helm of the individual life is fraught with disaster.

Suggestion and miracle

One of the most important manifestations of abnormal suggestibility in the social field is wonderworking. Says Coe:[1] "Facts like those of suggestive healing have not failed to raise the question whether suggestion may not

[1] "The Spiritual Life," 200.

be the clew to the miraculous element in the lives of the saints, and even in the life of Christ, to say nothing of its bearing upon the wonderworking features of other religions. On the face of the stories of saintly visions, trances, and revelations one can certainly read the imprint of auto-suggestion. Nor must we stop here. Let us consider two exclusive cases of the most strange physical manifestations that have been known to accompany spiritual exaltation. Seven hundred years ago St. Francis of Assisi, founder of the Order of Franciscans, after long meditation on the wounds of Christ, found upon his own person sores or 'stigmata' corresponding to the five wounds of the Saviour. Similarly, in the third quarter of this century, Louise Lateau, a devout girl, repeatedly shed blood at the same points. A committee of competent investigators, after carefully examining into her case, became convinced that the phenomena were genuine, and free from intentional deception. But this very wonder has been duplicated in substance by one or more hypnotic subjects through whose skin blood has been caused to exude by suggestion. Lesser phenomena of the same class, such as the production of redness, inflammation, and swelling, have been repeatedly witnessed."

Suggestion in Oriental magic

Certain verified feats of Indian jugglery give color to the belief that in the *art* of hypnotism — as distinct from the *scientific comprehension* of it — the Oriental adepts are far in advance of anything yet attained in our psychopathic clinics. Says Bose:[1] —

"Dr. Hensoldt saw 'in the centre of one of the largest squares in Agra a Yogi plant a mango — an edible tropical fruit about the size of a large pear growing on a

[1] "Hindu Civilization during British Rule," II, 152.

tree which reaches a height of from forty to one hundred and twenty feet. The Yogi dug a hole in the ground about six inches deep, placed the mango in it, and covered it with earth. . . . I was startled to see in the air above the spot where the mango had been buried the form of a large tree, at first rather indistinctly, presenting as it were mere hazy outlines, but becoming visibly more distinct, until at length there stood out as natural a tree as ever I had seen in my life — a mango tree about fifty feet high and in full foliage, with mangoes on it. All this happened within five minutes of the burying of the fruit . . . And yet there was something strange about this tree, a weird rigidness, not one leaf moving in the breeze. . . . Another curious feature I noticed — the leaves seemed to obscure the sun's rays. . . . It was a tree without a shadow.'

"As he approached it it faded, but grew clear again as he receded to his original position; but on his retreating beyond that point it again faded. 'Each individual saw the tree only from the place where he stood.' The English officers not present from the commencement saw nothing at all. Then the Yogi preached — so absorbingly that Dr. Hensoldt 'seemed to forget time and space.' He consequently did not notice the disappearance of the tree. When the Yogi ceased speaking the tree had gone. Then he dug up the mango he had buried. This mango feat he saw five times. Before the palace of the Guikwar of Baroda 'in the open air and in broad daylight,' Dr. Hensoldt declares he saw for the first time — he saw it thrice subsequently — the celebrated rope trick. A Yogi, after preaching a most impressive sermon, 'took a rope about fifteen feet long and perhaps an inch thick. One

end of this rope he held in his left hand, while with the right he threw the other end up in the air. The rope instead of coming down again remained suspended, even after the Yogi had removed his other hand, and it seemed to have become as rigid as a pillar. Then the Yogi seized it with both hands, and to my utter amazement, *climbed up* this rope suspended all the time, in defiance of gravity, with the lower end at least five feet from the ground. And in proportion as he climbed up it seemed as if the rope was lengthening out indefinitely above him and disappearing beneath him, for he kept on climbing until he was fairly out of sight, and the last I could distinguish was his white turban and a piece of this never ending rope. Then my eyes could endure the glare of the sky no longer, and when I looked again he was gone.' As an Oriental traveller and student, Dr. Hensoldt concludes that Hindu adepts have 'brought hypnotism to such a degree of perfection that, while under its influence our senses are no longer a criterion of the reality around us, but can be made to deceive us in a manner which is perfectly amazing.'"

Prestige is conferred by evident power

7. *Source of Suggestion.* — One is most susceptible to suggestions from certain quarters or from certain people — from those clothed with *prestige*. Prestige is that which excites such wonder or admiration as to paralyze the critical faculty. It is not the same at all stages. The boy, trying constantly to do things, admires most those who can do things better than he can or things he cannot do at all. Says Cooley:[1] "His father sitting at his desk probably seems an inert and unattractive phenomenon, but the man who can make shavings or dig a deep hole

[1] "Human Nature and the Social Order," 290–293.

is a hero; and the seemingly perverse admiration which children at a later age show for circus men and for the pirates and desperadoes they read about, is to be explained in a similar manner. What they want is *evident* power."

"The idea of power and the types of personality which, as standing for that idea, have ascendency over us, are a function of our own changing character. At one stage of their growth nearly all imaginative boys look upon some famous soldier as the ideal man. He holds this place as symbol and focus for the aggressive, contending, dominating impulses of vigorous boyhood; to admire and sympathize with him is to gratify, imaginatively, these impulses. In this country some notable speaker and party leader often succeeds the soldier as the boyish ideal; his career is almost equally dominating and splendid, and, in time of peace, not quite so remote from reasonable aspirations."

Kinds and tokens of power

"The simpler and more dramatic or visually imaginable kinds of power have a permanent advantage as regards general ascendency. Only a few can appreciate the power of Darwin, and those few only when the higher faculties of their minds are fully awake; there is nothing dramatic, nothing appealing to the visual imagination, in his secluded career. But we can all *see* Grant or Nelson or Moltke at the headquarters of their armies, or on the decks of their ships, and hear the roar of their cannons. They hold one by the eye and by the swelling of an emotion felt to be common to a vast multitude of people."

Hero-stuff

"This need of a dramatic or visually imaginable presentation of power is no doubt more imperative in the childlike peoples of southern Europe than it is in the sedater and more abstractly imaginative Teutons; but it

is strong in every people, and is shared by the most intellectual classes in their emotional moods. Consequently these heroes of the popular imagination, especially those of war, are enabled to serve as the instigators of a common emotion in great masses of people, and thus to produce in large groups a sense of comradeship and solidarity. The admiration and worship of such heroes is probably the chief feeling that people have in common in all early stages of civilization, and the main bond of social groups."

Traits of the born leader

The born leader is one whose superiority seems boundless. If it is only relative, if we can measure it, if we can fathom the secret of it and can see how we can finally attain to it ourselves, he is no longer our hero. In every crisis he must appear to be master of the situation, not perplexed, dubious, or vacillating. His faith in himself and in his undertaking must appear tremorless. He must bear up when others despair, remain serene when they are agitated. His intelligence must overarch and reach beyond that of his followers. Not unbroken success, not measurable excellence, but the gift of striking and stirring the imagination of others is, perhaps, the essential thing in natural leadership. Cooley[1] remarks: "A sense of power in others seems to involve a sense of their inscrutability; and, on the other hand, so soon as a person becomes plain he ceases to stimulate the imagination; we have seen all around him, so that he no longer appears an open door to new life." "The power of mere inscrutability arises from the fact that it gives a vague stimulus to thought and then leaves it to work out the details to suit itself."

[1] "Human Nature and the Social Order," 313–315.

"A strange and somewhat impassive physiognomy is often, perhaps, an advantage to an orator, or leader of any sort, because it helps to fix the eye and fascinate the mind. Such a countenance as that of Savonarola may have counted for much toward the effect he produced. Another instance of the prestige of the inscrutable is the fascination of silence, when power is imagined to lie behind it. The very name of William the Silent gives one a sort of thrill, whether he knows anything of that distinguished character or not. One seems to see a man darkly potent, mysteriously dispensing with the ordinary channel of self-assertion, and attaining his ends without evident means. It is the same with Von Moltke, 'silent in seven languages,' whose genius humbled France and Austria in two brief campaigns. And General Grant's taciturnity undoubtedly fascinated the imagination of the people — after his earlier successes had shown that there was really something in him — and helped to secure to him a trust and authority much beyond that of any other of the Federal generals. It is the same with a personal reserve in every form: one who always appears to be his own master and does not too readily reveal his deeper feelings, is so much the more likely to create an impression of power. He is formidable because incalculable."

Prestige the key to "natural authority"

Acquired prestige is that due to proximity, place, office, etc. The ascendency of the parent in moulding the character of a child is due not alone to the long term of association, but also to the fact that the parent, as the first adult in the child's ken, seems to him limitless in powers and wisdom. This gives the father a long lead over others and procures him obedience after he is no longer able to punish. Prestige of this kind explains the "natural

authority" of teacher over pupil, squire over tenant, priest over flock, officer over men. In France a dashing "man on horseback" like General Boulanger has prestige. In the East the hermit, or *yogi*, is admired and obeyed.

Force *vs.* prestige as inspirer of political obedience

A government not founded on common consent must base its authority on fear or on prestige. The latter is cheaper, and more satisfactory both to rulers and ruled. This is why authoritative governments always surround themselves with prestige-conferring pomp. Thus Dill [1] observes: —

"The imperial government at all times displayed the politic or instinctive love of monarchy for splendor and magnificence. . . . After great fires and desolating wars, the first thought of the most frugal or the most lavish prince was to restore in greater grandeur what had been destroyed. After the great conflagration of 64 A.D., which laid in ashes ten out of the fourteen regions of Rome, Nero immediately set to work to rebuild the city in a more orderly fashion, with broader streets and open spaces. Vespasian, on his accession, found the treasury loaded with a debt of more than a billion and a half dollars. Yet the frugal emperor did not hesitate to begin at once the restoration of the Capitol, and all the other ruins left by the great struggle of 69 A.D. from which his dynasty arose. . . . Titus completed the Colosseum, and erected the famous baths. Domitian once more restored the Capitol, and added many new buildings."

Only popular governments dare to dispense with splendor and be "simple." A reappearance of state and magnificence in a government is good evidence that it no longer expresses the real will of the people.

[1] "Roman Society from Nero to Marcus Aurelius," 227.

8. *Duration of Suggestion.* — Reiteration of the same idea in various forms is essential to the production of an effect upon people in a normal state of mind. It takes time for the orator to weave his spell. It is in the closing weeks of the legislative session that the tireless lobbyist registers his triumph over the scruples of the legislators. Advertising, to bring in returns, must be persevered in; it may be months after heavy advertising is begun before the sales swell noticeably. The insurance solicitor knows the efficacy of "follow up" letters and conversations. The reiterated phrases of a church liturgy gradually inspire in the hearer the mood of worship. It is a trick of balladists to call up a certain emotional tone by a recurring phrase at the close of each stanza. Rossetti uses it in "Sister Helen," "Eden Bower," and "Troy Town." Villon's "Ballad of Dead Ladies" owes its effect to the refrain, "But where are the snows of yester year?" Aged couples exhibit sometimes a startling mental and moral resemblance due to the reciprocal influencing of each other for many years. It is a proverb that if you keep on throwing mud some of it will stick. The reform school, or reformatory, requires several years to turn out the "trusty." The educator estimates his power to mould the youth by the time allotted him. Says Mott[1] of the Presbyterian College at Teng-chou Fu, China: "For over thirty years, Dr. Calvin Mateer and his wife devoted the best energies of their lives to the comparatively small number of young men admitted to the college. They made much of personal contact with the students, and estimated that they could personally and deeply influ-

The efficacy of recurrent suggestion

[1] "The Evangelization of the World in this Generation," 93.

ence but about sixty at a time. The students were carefully selected and were kept as a rule for several years."

Moral recrystallization requires time

The officer demands four or five years to convert the gutter-snipe recruit into the finished soldier.[1] The Americanization of the immigrant is not a matter of weeks and months merely. The missionary finds that it is the first batch of converts that costs. Says Mott:[2] —

"In 1882, five years after the missionaries reached Uganda, they had their first baptisms. Up to the end of the seventh year less than a hundred had been baptized. In 1890 the tide began to rise more rapidly. Bishop had meetings in 1891 which were so largely attended that the crush reminded him of Exeter Hall. When the cathedral was dedicated the following year, the audience numbered nearly four thousand. In 1893, during the great revival led by Pilkington, hundreds were converted. The influence of this revival extended far and wide in different directions. At the beginning of 1894 there were only twenty country chapels, but by the end of that year the number had increased to two hundred." This snowball-avalanche effect neatly illustrates the laws of suggestibility. "The wonderful Telugu revival in the Lone Star Mission after nearly a generation of quiet work still serves to lift the faith of the Church."[3] "After many years of deep preparatory work in Fukien Province, the past few years have witnessed the greatest ingathering in the history of missions in China."[4]

[1] Kipling in his barrack-room ballad "The 'Eathen" describes the steps in the process of building up soldierly character, and the result. "Seven Seas," 191.

[2] "The Evangelization of the World in this Generation," 88.

[3] *Ibid.*, 99.

[4] *Ibid.*, 100.

9. *Volume of Suggestion.* — What strikes us from all directions at almost the same instant has a tremendous effect. Says Bagehot:[1] — Effect of a broadside of suggestion

"In 'Eothen' there is a capital description of how every sort of European resident in the East, even the shrewd merchant and 'the post-captain,' with his bright, wakeful eyes of commerce, comes soon to believe in witchcraft,[2] and to assure you, in confidence, that there 'really is something in it.' He has never seen anything convincing himself, but he has seen those who have seen those who have seen those who have seen. In fact, he has lived in an atmosphere of infectious belief, and he has inhaled it. Scarcely any one can help yielding to the current infatuations of his sect or party. For a short time — say some fortnight — he is resolute; he argues and objects; but, day by day, the poison thrives, and reason wanes. What he hears from his friends, what he reads in the party organ,

[1] "Physics and Politics," 93.

[2] Stoll ("Suggestion und Hypnotismus," Zweite Auflage, 416), in commenting on the atrocious witch trial at Zug, Switzerland, in 1737, points out how completely the learned judges stood under the spell of the universal witchcraft belief of their times. Their judgment was so thoroughly warped that they could not detect in the testimony of the accused the convincing note of truth, nor recognize how perfectly the account of themselves the poor women gave tallied with their circumstances. Among the effects of Kathri Gilli was a small bag of white powder. Her accuser declared it was a poison used for the malicious destruction of cattle whereas Kathri explained that it was oat flour. Some of it was given to a dog without ill effects. Kathri offered to prove the harmlessness of this powder by partaking of it herself. Nevertheless, the experienced judges were so obsessed by the witchcraft superstition that they saw no convincing proof in the experiment with the dog, failed to draw a rational conclusion from the agreement between the assertion of Kathri and the outcome of the experiment, and deemed the rack a likelier means of eliciting the truth of the matter than testing the powder on Kathri herself!

produces its effect. The plain, palpable conclusion which every one around him believes has an influence greater and yet more subtle; that conclusion seems so solid and unmistakable; his own good arguments get daily more and more like a dream. Soon the gravest sage shares the folly of the party with which he acts and the sect with which he worships."

The secret of the might of public opinion

Men who easily throw off the thousand successive suggestions of everyday life are carried off their feet by the volume of suggestion that emanates from great numbers. This is the secret of the power of public opinion. Bryce [1] has set forth with great clearness the effect upon the individual of the deliquescence of small primitive groups and communities and their merging into a larger society.

Individuality in early society

"In small and rude communities, every free man, or at least every head of a household, feels his own significance and realizes his own independence. He relies on himself, he is little interfered with by neighbors or rulers. His will and his action count for something in the conduct of the affairs of the community he belongs to, yet common affairs are few compared to those in which he must depend on his own exertions. The most striking pictures of individualism that literature has preserved for us are those of the Homeric heroes, and of the even more terrible and self-reliant warriors of the Scandinavian Sagas, men like Ragnar Lodbrog and Egil, son of Skallagrim, who did not regard even the gods, but trusted to their own might and main. In more developed states of society organized on an oligarchic basis, such as were the feudal kingdoms of the Middle Ages, or in socially aristocratic

[1] "The American Commonwealth," II, ch. LXXXIV.

countries such as most parts of Europe have remained down to our own time, the bulk of the people are no doubt in a dependent condition, but each person derives a certain sense of personal consequence from the strength of his group and of the person or family at the head of it. Moreover, the upper class, being the class which thinks and writes, as well as leads in action, impresses its own type upon the character of the whole nation, and that type is still individualistic, with a strong consciousness of personal free will, and a tendency for each man, if not to think for himself, at least to value and to rely on his own opinion.

The rise of great collectivities

"Let us suppose, however, that the aristocratic structure of society has been dissolved, that the old groups have disappeared, that men have come to feel themselves members rather of the nation than of classes, or groups, or communities within the nation, that a levelling process has destroyed the ascendency of birth and rank, that large landed estates no longer exist, and that many persons in what was previously the humbler class are found possessed of property. Under such conditions of social equality the habit of intellectual command and individual self-confidence will have vanished from the leading class, which creates the type of national character, and will exist nowhere in the nation.

And of democracy

"Let us suppose, further, that political equality has gone hand in hand with the levelling down of social eminence." So that each feels that "his vote or voice counts for no more than that of his neighbor, that he can prevail, if at all, only by keeping himself on a level with his neighbor and recognizing the latter's personality as being every whit equal to his own.

The increase of social pressure

"Suppose further that all this takes place in an enormously large and populous country, where the governing voters are counted by so many millions that each individual feels himself a mere drop in the ocean, the influence which he can exert privately, whether by his personal gifts or by his wealth, being confined to the small circle of his town or neighborhood. On all sides there stretches around him an illimitable horizon; and beneath the blue vault which covers that horizon there is everywhere the same busy multitude with its clamor of mingled voices which he hears close by. In this multitude his own being seems lost. He has the sense of insignificance which overwhelms us when at night we survey the host of heaven and know that from even the nearest star this planet of ours is invisible.

The fatalism of the multitude

"When the scene of action is a small commonwealth, the individual voters are many of them personally known to one another, and the causes which determine their votes are understood and discounted. When it is a moderately sized country, the towns or districts which compose it are not too numerous for reckoning to overtake and imagination to picture them, and in many cases their action can be explained by well-known reasons which may be represented as transitory. But when the theatre stretches itself to a continent, when the number of voters is counted by many millions, the wings of imagination droop, and the huge voting mass ceases to be thought of as merely so many individual human beings no wiser or better than one's own neighbors. The phenomena seem to pass into the category of the phenomena of nature. . . . They inspire a sort of awe, a sense of individual impotence, like that which man feels when he contem-

plates the majestic and eternal forces of the inanimate world."

Individuality and numbers

It is perhaps the dwarfing pressure of numbers that explains why vast and populous societies seem to produce small individualities, whereas little societies permit great men to arise. Compare great homogeneous aggregations, such as Egypt, China, Persia, Babylonia, India, with the diminutive communities of Judea, the Greek city-states, the Italian cities of the Middle Ages, the free towns of mediæval Germany, the Netherlands, Scotland, and Switzerland.

SUMMARY

All persons are more or less amenable to the force of suggestion.

Suggestibility seems quite as pronounced among nature men as among culture men.

Experience and reflection in time build up a self with a certain momentum of its own.

The marked suggestibility of woman is partly due to her nervous organization, partly to her subjection to social pressure.

In the normal mental state, indirect suggestion succeeds best ; in the abnormal state, direct suggestions may be obeyed.

Hypnosis and kindred states are probably a temporary abeyance of the higher controlling centers, leaving exposed to alien control the less organized and integrated psychoses of the lower centres.

That which produces bedazzlement and obedience is *prestige*. It is not the same for all stages of personal or racial development.

Training or drill involves the building up of stable habits by means of reiterated suggestions.

EXERCISES

1. Explain the deadliness of the innuendo.

2. How is it that with faint praise one can damn a rival more than with downright depreciation ?

3. Show why, in exchange or diplomacy, the one who best dissembles his estimate of the thing he has and of the thing the other man has is likely to get the better of the bargain.

4. Account for the fact that the best way to get the offer of the coveted position is to affect an indifference to it.

5. Explain why, in coping with men, boldness is so often justified by the outcome. Is it so in coping with nature ?

6. Why is it safer, on meeting a formidable animal, to stand than to run ?

7. What is the point of the saying, "He doth protest too much"?

8. Justify by psychology the advice in "Joseph Vance" (p. 48): "When a chap thinks you know he believes in your solvency, don't ondeceive him by orfering him cash. Then he'll know you think he believes you insolvent and never give you a brass farden o' credit."

9. Explain the good moral influence of certain teachers and the utter lack of influence of other teachers.

10. Does the succession of hero types in the development of the boy into the man correspond to the succession of folk heroes in the rise of a people from barbarism to civilization ?

CHAPTER III

THE CROWD

THE strength of multiplied suggestion is at its maximum when the individual is in the midst of a throng, helpless to control his position or movements. The same pressure on the body that prevents voluntary movement conveys promptly to him all the electrifying swayings and tremors that betray the emotions of the mass. This squeeze of the crowd tends to depress the self-sense. Says James:[1] —

Individuality and voluntary movement

"In a sense, then, . . . the 'Self of selves,' when carefully examined, is found to consist mainly of the collection of these peculiar motions in the head and between the head and the throat. I do not for a moment say that this is all it consists of . . . but I feel quite sure that these cephalic motions are the portions of my innermost activity of which I am most distinctly aware. If the dim portions which I cannot yet define should prove to be like unto these distinct portions in me, and I like other men, it would follow that our entire feeling of spiritual activity, or what commonly passes by that name, is really a feeling of bodily activities, whose exact nature is by most men overlooked."

Sidis[2] goes further in declaring: "If anything gives us a strong sense of our individuality, it is surely our voluntary movements. We may say that the individual self

[1] "The Principles of Psychology," I, 301.

[2] "The Psychology of Suggestion," 299.

grows and expands with the increase of variety and intensity of its voluntary activity; and conversely, the life of the individual self sinks, shrinks with the decrease of variety and intensity of voluntary movements." Often a furious naughty child will suddenly become meek and obedient after being held a moment as in a vise. On the playground a saucy boy will abruptly surrender and "take it back" when held firmly on the ground without power to move hand or foot. The cause is not fear, but deflation of the ego.

Depression of the self sense in the throng

Here, perhaps, is the reason why individuality is so wilted in a dense throng, and why persons of a highly developed but somewhat fragile personality have a horror of getting nipped in a crowd. It is said that in the French theatre of the old régime the standing portion of the audience (pit) was always more emotional and violent in its demonstrations than the sitting portion (parquet), and that the providing of seats for the pit spectators greatly quieted their demeanor. The experienced orator knows that a standing open-air crowd is very different in response from a seated indoor audience, and changes his style accordingly.

Fixation of attention

Nevertheless, a holiday jam in a railroad station or at a race-course is no mob. A crowd self will not arise unless there is an orientation of attention, expectancy, a narrowing of the field of consciousness that excludes disturbing impressions. When a crowd is entering the critical state, we hear of "strained attention," "sea of upturned faces," "bated breath," "ominous hush," "a silence such that you can hear a fly buzz or a pin drop." The following newspaper account[1] of a Paderewski matinée shows the rôle of expectancy and inhibition:

[1] See Sidis, "The Psychology of Suggestion," 301.

"There is a chatter, a rustling of programmes, a waving of fans, a nodding of feathers, a general air of expectancy, and the lights are lowered. A hush. All eyes are turned to a small door leading on to the stage; it is opened. Paderewski enters. . . . A storm of applause greets him, . . . but after it comes a tremulous hush and a prolonged sigh, . . . created by the long, deep inhalation of upward of three thousand women. . . . Paderewski is at the piano. . . . Thousands of eyes watch every commonplace movement [of his] through opera-glasses with an intensity painful to observe. He the idol, they the idolaters. . . . Toward the end of the performance the most decorous women seem to abandon themselves to the influence. . . . There are sighs, sobs, the tight clinching of the palms, the bowing of the head. Fervid exclamations: 'He is my master!' are heard in the feminine mob."

Excitement

An excited throng easily turns mob because excitement weakens the reasoning power and predisposes to suggestions in line with the master emotion. Thus, frightened persons are peculiarly susceptible to warnings, angry persons to denunciations, expectant persons to promises, anxious persons to rumors. An agitated gathering is tinder, and the throngs that form in times of public tension are very liable to become mobs.

Elements in the crowd that profit by the heightened suggestibility

Although crowding, fixation of attention, and excitement exalt suggestibility, all members of the crowd do not experience this in the same degree. There are at least two descriptions of people who, in the give-and-take of the throng, are more likely to impose suggestions than to accept them. The *intelligent* are able to criticise and appraise the suggestions that impinge upon them. They are quick to react if a suggestion clashes with their in-

terests or their convictions, whereas the ignorant are at the mercy of the leader or the claque, and may be stampeded into a course of action quite at variance with their real desires. The *fanatical and impassioned* are little responsive to impressions from without, because of their inner tension. Being determined from within, they emit powerful suggestions, but are hard to influence. There is thus a tendency for the warped and inflamed members to impart their passion to the rest and to sweep along with them the neutral and indifferent. This is why, as the crowd comes under the hypnotic spell, the extremists gain the upper hand of the moderates.

Emotionalism of the crowd

Feelings, having more means of vivid expression, run through the crowd more readily than ideas. Masked by their anonymity, people feel free to give rein to the expression of their feelings. To be heard, one does not speak; one shouts. To be seen, one does not simply show one's self; one gesticulates. Boisterous laughter, frenzied objurgations, frantic cheers, are needed to express the merriment or wrath or enthusiasm of the crowd. Such exaggerated signs of emotion cannot but produce in suggestible beholders exaggerated states of mind. The mental temperature rises, so that what seemed hot now seems lukewarm, what felt tepid now feels cold. The intensifying of the feelings in consequence of reciprocal suggestion will be most rapid when the crowd meets under agitating circumstances. In this case the unbridled manifestation of feeling prevails from the first, and the psychic fermentation proceeds at a great rate.

Arrest of thought in the crowd

To the degree that feeling is intensified, reason is paralyzed. In general, strong emotion inhibits the intellectual processes. In a sudden crisis we expect the sane act

from the man who is "cool," who has not "lost his head." Now, the very hurly-burly of the crowd tends to distraction. Then, the high pitch of feeling to which the crowd gradually works up checks thinking and results in a temporary imbecility. There is no question that, taken herdwise, people are less sane and sensible than they are dispersed.

The crowd leader

In a real deliberative assembly there is a possibility that the best thought, the soundest opinion, the shrewdest plan advanced from any quarter will prevail. Where there is cool discussion and leisurely reflection, ideas struggle with one another, and the fittest are accepted by all. In the fugitive, structureless crowd, however, there can be no fruitful debate. Under a wise leader the crowd may act sagaciously. But there is no guarantee that the master of the crowd shall be wiser than his followers. The man of biggest voice or wildest language, the aggressive person who first leaps upon a table, raises aloft a symbol, or utters a catching phrase, is likely to become the bell-wether.

The psychic process in the crowd

Under these conditions — heightened suggestibility and emotion, arrested thinking — three things will happen when an impulse, whether emanating from a spectacle, an event, or a leader, runs through the crowd.

1. *Extension.* — By sheer contagion it extends to unsympathetic persons. Thus by-standing scoffers have been drawn into a revival maelstrom,[1] law-abiding persons

[1] Davenport tells of a young man who happened to be standing as a spectator on the fringe of a Southern camp-meeting of two thousand people. "He had had no religious experience and at that time did not wish any. The crowd was laboring under great religious excitement, and reflex phenomena were abundantly in evidence. Suddenly my friend found himself with his hands pressed against his lungs, shouting,

have been sucked into the vortex of a brutal lynching bee, hard-headed workingmen with dependent families have been stampeded into a sympathetic strike. In his story "On the City Wall," Kipling introduces a young native just back to Madras from Oxford. He is a typical product of Western culture, polished, sceptical, utterly aloof from his people, and contemptuous of the foolish religious riots between Hindu and Mohammedan fanatics. He shows us this same scoffer a few hours later fighting furiously in the thick of the riot on behalf of his Mohammedan coreligionists for whose faith he cares not a straw. Sidis [1] cites an incident of the riots of certain military colonists in Russia in 1831: "While Sokolov was fighting hard for his life, I saw a corporal lying on the piazza and crying bitterly. On my question, 'Why do you cry?' he pointed in the direction of the mob and exclaimed, 'Oh, they do not kill a commander, but a father!' I told him that instead of it he should rather go to Sokolov's aid. He rose at once and ran to the help of his commander. A little later when I came with a few soldiers to Sokolov's help, I found the same corporal striking Sokolov with a club. 'Wretch, what are you

'Hallelujah!' at the top of his voice." In a Southern congregation brought to the revival point by the preaching of Dr. Alexander, "the sympathetic wave spread from the centre to the circumference, and the whole audience was swayed like a forest in a mighty wind. Dr. Alexander himself is on record as having found it necessary to put forth a conscious effort of resistance in order to hold himself steady in the violence of the storm, and he testified that the old tobacco planters in the rear, who had not listened to one word of the sermon, displayed tremulous emotion in every muscle of their brawny faces, while the tears coursed down their wrinkled cheeks." — "Primitive Traits in Religious Revivals," 226, 227.

[1] "The Psychology of Suggestion," 305.

doing? Have you not told me he was to you like a father?' To which he answered, 'It is such a time, your honor; all the people strike him; why should I keep quiet?'" An English prison matron confesses that sometimes when she hears the women under her care "break out" and commence smashing and destroying everything they can get hold of, it is as much as she can do to restrain herself from joining in.

2. *Intensification.* — Each individual impressed feels more intensely the moment he perceives that so many others share his feeling. Hence, a secondary wave, a reverberation, runs through the crowd that is becoming aware of itself.

3. *Predisposition.* — The perceived unison begets a sympathy that makes like response easier the next time.

Time needed for the emergence of a crowd self

Since each fulfilled suggestion increases the emotion of the mob in volume and pitch, the passing of the crowd into the mob is more or less gradual. A mob is *a formation that takes time.* The revivalist expects little response during his first half-hour. No matter how brilliant his work in the earlier scenes, an actor will not elict the wildest demonstrations from his audience until the closing acts. There are always several steps in the decline of an orderly crowd into a riotous mob. It is not a single blow, but a quick succession of shocks, that throws an army into a panic. In all these cases, with the growing fascination of the mass for the individual, his consciousness contracts to the pin-point of the immediate moment, and the volume of suggestion needed to start an impulse on its conquering career becomes less and less. He becomes automatic, in a way unconscious. The end is a tranced impressionable condition akin to hypnosis.

The Kentucky Revival

There is no assignable limit to the mastery of the crowd self over the selves of the members. McMaster[1] thus describes a famous Kentucky revival, 1799–1800. "One of the brothers was irresistibly impelled to speak.... The words which then fell from his lips roused the people before him 'to a pungent sense of sin.' Again and again the woman shouted, and would not be silent. He started to go to her. The crowd begged him to turn back. Something within him urged him on, and he went through the house shouting and exhorting and praising God. In a moment the floor, to use his own words, 'was covered with the slain.' Their cries for mercy were terrible to hear. Some found forgiveness, but many went away 'spiritually wounded' and suffering unutterable agony of soul. Nothing could allay the excitement. Every settlement along the Green River and the Cumberland was full of religious fervor. Men fitted their wagons with beds and provisions, and travelled fifty miles to camp upon the ground and hear him preach. The idea was new; hundreds adopted it, and camp-meetings began.

"At no time was the 'falling exercise' so prevalent as at night. Nothing was then wanting that could strike terror into minds weak, timid, and harassed. The red glare of the camp-fires reflected from hundreds of tents and wagons; the dense blackness of the flickering shadows, the darkness of the surrounding forest, made still more terrible by the groans and screams of the 'spiritually wounded,' who had fled to it for comfort; the entreaty of the preachers; the sobs and shrieks of the downcast still walking through the dark valley of the Shadow of Death; the shouts and songs of praise of the happy ones

[1] "History of the People of the United States," II, 578–582.

who had crossed the Delectable Mountains, had gone on through the fogs of the Enchanted Ground, and entered the Land of Beulah, were too much for those over whose minds and bodies lively imaginations held full sway. The heart swelled, the nerves gave way, the hands and feet grew cold, and, motionless and speechless, they fell headlong to the ground. In a moment crowds gathered about them to pray and shout. Some lay still as death. Some passed through frightful twitchings of face and limb. At Cabin Creek so many fell that, lest the multitude should tread on them, they were carried to the meeting-house and laid in rows on the floor. At Cane Ridge the number was three thousand."

"The excitement surpassed anything that had been known. Men who came to scoff remained to preach. All day and all night the crowd swarmed to and fro from preacher to preacher, singing, shouting, laughing, now rushing off to listen to some new exhorter who had climbed upon a stump, now gathering around some unfortunate who, in their peculiar language, was 'spiritually slain.' Soon men and women fell in such numbers that it became impossible to move about without trampling them, and they were hurried to the meeting-house. At no time was the floor less than half covered. Some lay quiet, unable to move or speak. Some talked, but could not move. Some beat the floor with their heels. Some, shrieking in agony, bounded about, it is said, like a live fish out of water. Many lay down and rolled over and over for hours at a time. Others rushed wildly over the stumps and benches, and then plunged, shouting Lost! Lost! into the forest.

"As the meetings grew more and more frequent, this

nervous excitement assumed new and more terrible forms. One was known as jerking; another, as the barking exercise; a third, as the Holy Laugh. 'The jerks' began in the head and spread rapidly to the feet. The head would be thrown from side to side so swiftly that the features would be blotted out and the hair made to snap. When the body was affected, the sufferer was hurled over hindrances that came in his way, and finally dashed on the ground to bounce about like a ball. At camp-meetings in the far South, saplings were cut off breast-high and left 'for the people to jerk by.' One who visited such a camp-ground declares that about the roots of from fifty to one hundred saplings the earth was kicked up 'as by a horse stamping flies.'"

"From the nerves and muscles the disorder passed to the mind. Men dreamed dreams and saw visions, nay, fancied themselves dogs, went down on all fours, and barked till they grew hoarse. It was no uncommon sight to behold numbers of them gathered about a tree, barking, yelping, 'treeing the devil.' Two years later, when much of the excitement of the great revival had gone down, falling and jerking gave way to hysterics. During the most earnest preaching and exhorting, even sincere professors of religion would, on a sudden, burst into loud laughter; others, unable to resist, would follow, and soon the assembled multitude would join in. This was the 'Holy Laugh,' and became, after 1803, a recognized part of worship."

Psychology of the revival

Coe[1] thus accounts for the extraordinary phenomena often manifested in religious assemblies. "The striking psychic manifestations which reach their climax among

[1] "The Spiritual Life," 141–143, 146.

us in emotional revivals, camp-meetings, and negro services have a direct relation to certain states of an essentially hypnotic and hallucinatory kind. In various forms such states have appeared and reappeared throughout the history of religion. Examples of what is here referred to are found in the sacred frenzy of the Bacchantes, the trance of the Sibyls, the ecstasy of the Neo-Platonists, the enlightenment that came to Gautama Buddha under the sacred Bo-tree, the visions of the canonized saints, the absorption into God experienced by various mystics, and the religious epidemics of the Middle Ages, such as tarantism and St. Vitus's dance. All these and a multitude of similar phenomena were produced by processes easily recognized by any modern psychologist as automatic and suggestive. Similarly, the phenomenon in Methodist history known as the 'power' was induced by hypnotic processes now well understood, though hidden until long after the days of the Wesleys." "The explanation of the 'power' and similar outbreaks is simple. Under the pressure of religious excitement there occurs a sporadic case of hallucination, or of motor automatism, or of auto-hypnotism, taking the form of trance, visions, voices, or catalepsy. The onlookers naturally conceive a more or less distressing fear lest the mysterious power attack their own persons. Fear acts as a suggestion, and the more suggestible soon realize their expectation. In accordance with the law of suggestion, every new case adds power to the real cause and presently the conditions are right for an epidemic of such experiences." "Suggestion works in proportion as it secures a monopoly of attention. Let us ask what, according to this law, will happen to passably suggestible persons who submit them-

selves to certain well-known revival practices. Let us suppose that the notion of a striking transformation has been held before the subject's mind for days, weeks, or even years; let us suppose that the subject has finally been induced to go to the penitent form; here, we will suppose, prayers full of sympathy and emotional earnestness are offered for him, and that everything has been so arranged as to produce a climax in which he will finally believe that the connection between himself and God is now accomplished. The leader says to him: 'Do you now believe? Then you are saved.' Is it not evident that this whole process favors the production of a profound emotional transformation directly through suggestion?"

The crowd cannot last

The crowd self is ephemeral. Not for long can it supersede the individual self. The straining of attention leads to fatigue, lessened power of response to further suggestions. Then, stimuli from within help to break the spell. Sensations of hunger, cold, and weariness become so insistent as to distract the attention. Presently the bond dissolves, and the crowd scatters. Mobs have been broken up by a downpour of rain or an alarm of fire. The little Corsican disperses a turbulent crowd with grape; the humane philosopher turns a fire hose on it. It is easy to tell whether a riot is a collective aberration or a work of intent by noticing whether the crowd returns the next day. If it does, there is more behind it than mass psychology.

The crowd is unstable

Whether its members be saints or knaves, sages or hodmen, the self of the crowd exhibits certain characteristics. It is *unstable*, as the word "mob" (*mobile*) indicates. Its hero one moment may be its victim the next. It may pass abruptly from reckless courage to

dastard fear. Little things turn its purpose. Taine[1] tells of a street mob bent on hanging a supposed monopolizer. By some words uttered on his behalf it was brought to embrace him, drink with him, and make him join them in a mad dance about a liberty pole. At the close of the Paris Commune, a crowd, irritated by the defiant air of one of the communist women, howls, "Death to her!" An old gentleman cries, "No cruelty, after all it is a woman!" In a moment the wrath of the crowd is turned on him. "He is a communist, an incendiary!" But in this critical moment the shrill voice of a gamin is heard, "Don't hurt him, she's his girl!" Thereupon a great burst of laughter about the old gentleman, and he is saved.[2]

The crowd is credulous, irrational, and simple-minded

The crowd self is *credulous*. The "holding-off" attitude is a kind of inhibition, for we tend to believe what we hear reiterated with fire. Now, in a psychological crowd, individuals are "out of themselves." For them the past does not exist. Rational analysis and test are out of the question. *The faculties we doubt with are asleep.* Again, the crowd self is *irrational*. It cannot dissect, weigh, and compare, cannot apply remembered teachings. Under the sway of vivid impressions through eye or ear the man in the crowd cannot relate his present problem to his previous experiences. His actions are near to reflexes. The crowd self shows *simplicity*. Like children and savages, it cannot embrace in a single judgment several factors and details. It sees only one aspect of a thing at a time.[3] It may face about completely when

[1] "Revolution Française," II, 145.

[2] Tarde, "Essais et mélanges sociologiques," 22.

[3] In Cincinnati, in 1884, a mob, outraged by the acquittal of a brutal murderer, burned the Court House when balked of their lynching purpose.

some other aspect is thrown into the focus of its attention. Unable to think things in their actual complexity, the crowd trusts to impressions or prejudices, if it is heterogeneous; to glittering generalities or abstract principles if it is a political or legislative assembly.

The crowd lacks virtue

Finally, the crowd self is *immoral.* To be sure, it is capable of courage and generosity, even of honesty. The perpetrators of the September massacres in the French Revolution faithfully turned in the money and valuables found on their victims, while the mob that invaded the Tuileries in 1848 refrained from carrying away any of the priceless objects they saw. The crowd is emotional, and some of its emotions may be moral. On the whole, however, the virtues grow on an intellectual stalk. *Right* conduct is *thought-out* conduct. Conscience is a way of thinking things. Now, thronging paralyzes thought, and while the crowd may be sentimental and heroic, it will lack the virtues born of self-control — veracity, prudence, thrift, perseverance, respect for another's rights, obedience to law.

The crowd is the lowest form of association

It is safe to conclude that amorphous, heterogeneous gatherings are morally and intellectually below the average of their members. This manner of coming together deteriorates. The crowd may generate moral fervor, but it never sheds light. If at times it has furthered progress, it is because the mob serves as a battering-ram to raze some mouldering, bat-infested institution and clean

Their idea was to rebuke tricky, dishonest lawyers by destroying a building which had become a den of corruption rather than a temple of justice. A moment's cool reflection would have shown them that by burning the records of a century regarding wills, marriages, property transfers, mortgages, etc., they would produce enough litigation to fatten the hated lawyers for a generation.

the ground for something better. This better will be the creation of gifted individuals or of deliberative bodies, never of anonymous crowds. It is easier for masses to agree on a Nay than on a Yea. Hence crowds destroy despotisms, but never build free states; abolish evils, but never found works of beneficence. Essentially atavistic and sterile, the crowd ranks as the lowest of the forms of human association.

How deliberative assemblies escape the crowd vortex

A free people is obliged to settle matters of common concern in a deliberative assembly. But the big assembly skirts ever the slippery incline that leads down to mob madness, and guard-rails in the form of fixed modes of procedure are necessary to save it a misstep. Its chief protection is the Parliamentary Rules of Order, wrought out in the venerable House of Commons and certainly not the least among England's gifts to the world. The rules requiring that a meeting shall have a chairman, that the chairman shall not take part in debate, that no one shall speak without recognition, that the speaker shall address the chair and not the assembly, that remarks shall pertain to a pending motion, that personalities shall be taboo, and that members shall not be referred to by name — what are they but so many devices to keep the honey-tongued or brazen-throated crowd leader from springing to the centre of the stage and weaving his baleful spells ! The rules that the hearers be in order, that they remain seated, that they forbear to interrupt, that they patiently listen to all speakers regularly recognized, and that their signs of approval or disapproval be decorous — are not these so many guard-rails to help the assembly get safely by certain vertiginous moments?

Mob mind in city dwellers

It has long been recognized that the behavior of city populations under excitement shows the familiar characteristics of the mob, quite apart from any thronging. Here we get unanimity, impulsiveness, exaggeration of feeling, excessive credulity, fickleness, inability to reason, and sudden alternations of boldness and cowardice. Here, indeed, are the chief counts in the indictment which historians have drawn against the city democracies of old Greece and mediæval Italy.

The city facilitates inter-suggestion

These faults are due in part to the nervous strain of great cities. The bombardment of the senses by innumerable impressions tends to produce neurasthenia, the peculiar affliction of the city dweller. Moreover, in the sheltered life of the city live many degenerates that would be unsparingly eliminated by the sterner conditions of existence in the country. In the main, however, the behavior of city dwellers under excitement can best be understood as the result of mental contacts made possible by easy communication. Even in the crowd, the main thing is the contact of minds. Let this be given and the three consequences above pointed out must follow. An expectant or excited man learns that thousands of his fellow-townsmen have been seized by a certain strong feeling and meets with their expression of this feeling. Each of these townsmen learns how many others are feeling as he does. Each stage in the subsequent growth of this feeling in extent and in intensity is perceived, and so fosters sympathy and a will to "go along." Will we not inevitably, by this series of interactions, get that "out"-look which characterizes the human atom in the mob?

Says Jones:[1] "Inasmuch as the prevailing economic

[1] "Economic Crises," 204–205.

system enforces intimate association in a sense in which no previous system ever did, this class of influences tending to vitiate the economic reasoning of those who are subject to market influences may well demand serious attention. Businesses are being increasingly concentrated in large cities, and especially are those who control them being closely compacted together in the business sections of great cities. It has been asserted that these conditions originate the influences which breed crises, and the case of Australia, where the population is unusually concentrated in cities, has been cited as evidence. 'A large city is characterized by an intensity of internal imitation in proportion to the density of population, and a multiform multiplicity of the relations of its inhabitants. Thus there is an epidemic and contagious character given not only to its diseases, but to its styles and views.' The so-called 'booms' of American towns illustrate in acute form the occasional economic effect of these influences. The power of mental contagion is increased by such facilities for assemblage and communication as the railway, telegraph, and telephone. It is obviously enhanced by the practice of transacting business in industrial assemblages such as stock and produce exchanges. Attention may be called to the fact that in periods of unusual business success or depression, this physical concentration of traders in large markets is greatly increased."

Bearing of mental intimacy on booms and panics

But the propinquity of city people may be more than counteracted by their mental and moral heterogeneity. Says Professor Giddings:[1] "The increasing density of

Crowd phenomena in city and in country

[1] *Forum*, 35, pp. 251–252.

modern populations is seemingly favorable to popular tumult, which might easily become insurrection or revolution. In the literature of political science there is perhaps no more familiar assumption than the one which associates all the dangers of the mob spirit with the democratic organization of great cities." Yet "a systematic grouping of observations from many parts of the world would demonstrate that the phenomena of lawless popular action, as in insurrections, lynchings, and riotous outbreaks in connection with labor strikes, are, on the whole, phenomena of rural rather than of urban population. There have been scenes of wild violence in Paris and in London; there have been draft and other riots in New York City; but the collective violence in all the great cities of Europe and America for two hundred years would not make a great showing by comparison with the epidemics of emotion — accompanied by dancing and other manias — that surged through rural communities in connection with the great revival movements under the Wesleyans, the later revivals of 1837 and 1857, the insurrections like Shays's Rebellion and the Whiskey Rebellion, the Ku Klux Klan outrages, the Vigilance Committee activities, the conflicts between Gentiles and Mormons, the White Cap outrages, and the lynchings in our Western and Southern states.

Obstacles to impulsive coöperation among city dwellers

"The reason for this curious fact is undoubtedly to be found in the restraining effect of ethnic and mental difference. The rural community is relatively homogeneous. The 'neighbors' for miles in every direction are nearly all of one blood. They are practically of one economic condition. For the most part they are of one religious confession or of two or three confessions not very unlike

in creeds and practices. All are acquainted with one another. An exciting event or suggestion that moves one will, almost certainly, move the others. Emotion among them is highly contagious. They respond to like stimuli because they are alike. The city population is composite and differentiated. In a mixed crowd of hundreds that gathers on the street no one man of them all recognizes a dozen others. They are of all sorts and conditions, the well-to-do and the poor, and often of many nationalities. Danger arises only when discontent and inflammatory suggestion find homogeneous material to work upon in a quarter whose denizens are of one nationality and of the same economic condition, and among whom may be found, here and there, small gangs of toughs who are already disciplined in associating for lawless purposes. Only an extraordinary influence can combine the impulsive tendencies among unlike classes, differing nationalities, unacquainted neighborhoods, in one great outbreak. Such things have happened, and doubtless will happen again; but the normal influence of heterogeneity and differentiation in a population is unfavorable to collective action."

SUMMARY

In the dense throng individuality wilts and droops.

A common orientation of attention and a state of excitement predispose to the mob mood.

The heightened suggestibility of people under such conditions exaggerates the influence of the fanatical and impassioned.

Crowd conditions facilitate the circulation of feelings, hinder the circulation of ideas.

Under these conditions the dominant emotional note reaches an extreme pitch.

In the crowd rational or accurate thinking is arrested.

Every impulse that traverses the crowd smooths the way for its successor. The merging of many individual selves into a single crowd self therefore takes time.

The crowd self is unstable, credulous, irrational, and immoral.

The Rules of Order save the deliberative assembly from degenerating into a crowd.

EXERCISE

Show that each of these arts of the popular orator finds its warrant in some psychological characteristic of the crowd. If possible read Le Bon's "The Crowd," Bk. I, ch. III; Bk. II, ch. II, sec. I, ch. III.

1. At the outset seem to agree with it.
2. Vigorously affirm and reiterate with fire and passion.
3. Make each imagine you address him. By eye, voice, attitude, and action rivet attention and keep the spell unbroken.
4. Cut out facts, statistics, valid proof, and evidence.
5. Never argue or follow out painstakingly the links of a logical chain.
6. Use demonstration, ocular evidence, histrionism.
7. Use figures of speech, metaphors, emblems (flag, group symbol, totem), and shibboleths ("family," "home," "the Church," "the Fathers," "Our Country," "our Cause," "the Right").
8. Address passions (including, of course, cupidity), but not rational interests.

CHAPTER IV

MOB MIND

PRESENCE is not essential to mass suggestion. Mental touch is no longer bound up with physical proximity. With the telegraph to collect and transmit the expressions and signs of the ruling mood, and the fast mail to hurry to the eager clutch of waiting thousands the still damp sheets of the morning daily, remote people are brought, as it were, into one another's presence. Through its organs the excited public is able to assail the individual with a mass of suggestion almost as vivid as if he actually stood in the midst of an immense crowd.

Mob mind without the crowd

Formerly, within a day, a shock might throw into a fever all within a hundred miles. The next day it might agitate the zone beyond, but meanwhile the first body of people would have cooled down and become ready to listen to reason. And so, while a wave of excitement passed slowly over the country, the entire folk was at no moment in a state of agitation. Now, however, our space-annihilating devices make a shock well-nigh simultaneous. A vast public shares the same rage, alarm, enthusiasm, or horror. Then, as each part of the mass becomes acquainted with the sentiment of all the rest, the feeling is generalized and intensified. In the end the public swallows up the individuality of the ordinary man in much the same way the crowd swallows up the individuality of its members.

The public

Differences between crowd and public

Nevertheless, public and crowd are not identical in their characteristics. If by the aid of a telephonic news service — as in Budapest — people were brought into immediate touch, there would still be lacking certain conditions of the mob state. The hurly-burly, the press and heave of the crowd are avoided when contact is purely mental. As we have seen, in the throng the means of expressing feeling are much more effective than the facilities for expressing thought. But in a dispersed group feeling enjoys no such advantage. Both are confined to the same vehicle — the printed word — and so ideas and opinions run as rapidly through the public as emotions.

The psychology of the public more normal

One is member of but one crowd at a time, but by reading a number of newspapers, one can belong to several publics with, perhaps, different planes of vibration. So far as these various unanimities cross and neutralize one another, the suction of the public will be weakened. The crowd may be stampeded into folly or crime by accidental leaders. The public can receive suggestions only through the columns of its journal, the editor of which is like the chairman of a mass-meeting, for no one can be heard without his recognition. For all these reasons the psychology of the public, though similar to that of the crowd, is more normal.

Ours is the era of publics

Ours is not the era of hereditary rulers, oligarchies, hierarchies, or close corporations. But neither is it, as some insist, "the era of crowds." It is, in fact, *the era of publics*. Those who perceive that to-day under the influence of universal discussion the old fixed groupings which held their members so tenaciously — sects, parties, castes, and the like — are liquefying, that allegiances sit lightly, and that men are endlessly passing into new

combinations, seek to stigmatize these loose associations as "crowds." The true crowd is, however, in a declining rôle. Universal contact by means of print ushers in "the rule of public opinion," which is a totally different thing from "government by the mob."

Craze and fad are symptoms of mob mind

The principal manifestations of mob mind in vast bodies of dispersed individuals are the *craze* and the *fad*. These may be defined as *that irrational unanimity of interest, feeling, opinion, or deed in a body of communicating individuals, which results from suggestion and imitation.* In the chorus of execration over a sensational crime, in the clamor for the blood of an assassin, in waves of national feeling, in political "land-slides," in passionate "sympathetic" strikes, in cholera scares, in popular delusions, in religious crazes, in migration manias, in "booms" and panics, in agitations and insurrections, we witness contagion on a gigantic scale, favored in some cases by popular hysteria.

Theory of the craze

As there must be in the typical mob a centre which radiates impulses by fascination till they have subdued enough people to continue their course by sheer intimidation, so for the *craze* there must be an excitant, overcoming so many people that these can affect the rest by mere volume of suggestion. This first orientation may be produced by some striking event or incident. The murder of a leader, an insult to an ambassador, the predictions of a crazy fanatic, the words of a "Messiah," a sensational proclamation, the arrest of an agitator, a *coup d'état*, the advent of a new railroad, the collapse of a prominent bank, a number of deaths by an epidemic, a series of mysterious murders, an inexplicable occurrence, such as a comet, an eclipse, a star shower, or an earthquake,—

each of these has been the starting-point of some fever, mania, crusade, uprising, boom, panic, delusion, or fright. The more expectant or overwrought the public mind, the easier it is to set up a great perturbation. After a series of public calamities, a train of startling events, a pestilence, an earthquake, or a war, the anchor of reason finds no holding ground, and minds are blown about by every gust of passion or sentiment.

Socio-psychic phenomena in the early church

The early years of Christianity were marked by extraordinary signs of exalted suggestibility. Harnack [1] cites the following phenomena — regarded as tokens "of the Spirit and of Power" — in the primitive Christian church.

"1. God speaks to the missionaries in visions, dreams, and ecstasy, revealing to them affairs of moment and also trifles, controlling their plans, and pointing out the roads on which they are to travel, the cities where they are to stay, and the persons whom they are to visit. Visions emerge especially after martyrdom, the dead martyr appearing to his friends during the weeks that immediately follow his death, as in the case of Potamiæna, or of Cyprian, or of many others.

"2. At the missionary addresses of the apostles or evangelists, or at the services of the churches which they founded, sudden movements of rapture are experienced, many of them being simultaneous seizures; these are either full of terror and dismay, convulsing the whole spiritual life, or exultant outbursts of a joy that sees heaven opened to its eyes. The simple question, 'What must I do to be saved?' also bursts upon the mind with an elemental force.[2]

[1] "Expansion of Christianity," I, 251–252.

[2] How like all this to certain modern experiences! Says Evans, speaking of the conclusive manifestations among the Shakers: "Sometimes, after sitting awhile in silent meditation, they were seized with a

"3. Some are inspired, who have power to clothe their experience in words — prophets to explain the past, to interpret and to fathom the present, and to foretell the future. Their prophecies relate to the general course of history, but also to the fortunes of individuals, to what individuals are to do or leave undone.

"4. Brethren are inspired with the impulse to improvise prayers and hymns and psalms.

"5. Others are so filled with the Spirit that they lose consciousness and break out in stammering speech and cries, in unintelligible utterances which can be interpreted, however, by those who have the gift.

"6. Into the hands of others, again, the Spirit slips a pen, either in an ecstasy or in exalted moments of spiritual tension; they not merely speak, but write as they are bidden.

"7. Sick persons are brought to be healed by the missionaries, or by brethren who have been but recently awakened; wild paroxysms of terror in God's presence are also soothed, and in the name of Jesus demons are cast out.

"8. The Spirit impels men to an immense variety of extraordinary actions — to symbolic actions which are meant to reveal some mystery or to give some directions for life, as well as to deeds of heroism.

mighty trembling, under which they would often express the indignation of God against all sin, at other times, they were exercised with singing, shouting, and leaping for joy, at the near prospect of salvation. They were often exercised with great agitation of body and limbs, shaking, running, and walking the floor, with a variety of other operations and signs, swiftly passing and repassing each other, like clouds agitated with a mighty wind. These exercises, so strange in the eyes of the beholders, brought upon them the appellation of *Shakers*." — "Shakers," 21.

"9. Some perceive the presence of the Spirit with every sense; they see its brilliant light, they hear its voice, they smell the fragrance of immortality and taste its sweetness. Nay, more; they see celestial persons with their own eyes, see them and also hear them; they peer into what is hidden or distant or to come; they are even rapt into the world to come, into heaven itself, where they listen to 'words that cannot be uttered.'

"10. But although the Spirit manifests itself through marvels like these, it is no less effective in heightening the religious and the moral powers, which operate with such purity and power in certain individuals that they bear palpably the stamp of their divine origin."

Institutionalizing kills "the Spirit"

Evidently there are two main sources of these extraordinary mental phenomena — the subconscious and the social environment. It is only the latter that involves social psychology. Harnack significantly adds:[1] "It was in the primitive days of Christianity during the first sixty years of its course that their effects were most conspicuous, but they continued to exist all through the second century, although in diminished volume. . . . The Montanist movement certainly gave new life to 'the Spirit' which had begun to wane; but after the opening of the third century the phenomena dwindled rapidly and instead of being the hall-mark of the church at large, or of every individual community, they became merely the equipment of a few favored individuals."[2]

[1] "Expansion of Christianity," I, 254–256.

[2] Precisely this taming and institutionalizing of an elemental impulse is seen in the history of the Society of Friends. They obtained the name of *Quakers* from the violent tremblings which overcame the worshippers in the early days, and which they regarded as manifestations of divine power in them. It is hard to see in the sedate and quiet Friend

The abnormal suggestibility of mediæval society revealed itself in the Crusades,[1] especially the crusades of children. About 1212 Stephen, a shepherd boy, preached among the pilgrims at St. Denys a crusade of children to recover the Holy Sepulchre. Presently everywhere there arose children of ten years, and some even so young as eight, who claimed to be prophets also. They went about collecting followers and marching in solemn procession through towns and villages. Some noble youths joined these processions, and many girls. The efforts of parents to hold back their children were futile. "Bolts and bars would not hold the children. If shut up, they broke through doors and windows, and rushed, deaf to appeals of mothers and fathers, to take their places in the processions, which they saw passing by, whose crosses and banners, whose censers, songs, and shouts, and paraphernalia seemed, like the winds of torrid climates, to bear resistless infection. If the children were forcibly held and confined, so that escape was impossible, they wept and mourned, and at last pined, as if the receding sounds carried away their hearts and their strength. It was necessary to release them, and, forgetting to say farewell, . . . they ran to enlist in those deluded throngs that knew not whither they went." [2]

The Children's Crusade

In the neighborhood of Cologne, Nicholas, a boy of ten, gathered together not less than twenty thousand children. "Parents, friends, and pastors sought to restrain them by force or appeal, but they whose hearts were set upon the

of to-day the spiritual descendant of *exaltés* whose convulsions are said to have been so violent as to shake the house of meeting!

[1] See Von Sybel, "Geschichte des ersten Kreuzzuges," 185–203.

[2] Gray, "The Children's Crusade," 52.

enterprise mourned and pined so that we are told their lives were frequently endangered as by disease, and it was necessary to allow them to depart." [1] Ultimately nearly one hundred thousand children were drawn into the maelstrom, of whom at least a third never saw their homes again.

Mental epidemics in America

The child pilgrimages, the flagellant epidemic, the dancing mania, tarantism, the witchcraft delusion, and the anti-Jewish outbreaks down to the Russian *pogroms* of to-day all show the spirit of the hive. Of religious and moral epidemics America has had its full share. The Great Awakening in colonial days, the great revivals of 1800, 1830, and 1858, however fruitful in their results, were certainly extended by social suggestion. How else can we explain the wild-fire sweep of the movement after it had slowly won a certain headway and momentum?

Millerism

In 1840 William Miller went about predicting the coming of the Lord and the end of all things somewhere between the equinoxes of 1843–1844. By upwards of three thousand addresses he was able to win about fifty thousand followers, and these by interstimulation wrought one another up to a high pitch of fanaticism. As the great day approached, they forsook their callings, gave away their goods, prepared their ascension robes, and repaired to the fields. When the appointed time rolled by, instead of losing confidence in their leader, as an individual would have done, the Millerites, as if to illustrate the abeyance of reason in all collectivities, clung to their delusion and accepted the new date of October 22, 1844. During the interval converts multiplied, and the fanaticism was, if anything, more intense than before. When proph-

[1] Gray, "The Children's Crusade," 66.

ecy a second time failed, the growth of the sect was checked, although it survives to the present day.

The Women's Crusade [1] began in Hillsborough, Ohio, on Christmas morning, 1873. After a lecture by Dr. Dio Lewis on the Potency of Woman's Prayer in the Grog-shop, a meeting for prayer and organization was held, and thereupon the ladies, led by the wife of a distinguished general, sallied forth to the drug stores, hotels, and saloons. "The movement spread into adjacent towns, the women visiting saloons, singing, praying, and pleading with those engaged in the traffic to desist. In many places the ladies suffered severe privations, were oftentimes kept standing in the cold and rain, and were sometimes the subjects of severe remarks and direct persecution. The churches were crowded day and night, and touching incidents of recovery from ruin interested immense audiences." In spite of seeming success, the crusade soon died out and has never been repeated. Too much at variance with feminine nature to last, its sudden wide vogue can be explained only by mental contagion.

The Women's Crusade

In 1901 Mrs. Nation of Wichita, Kansas, went about Kansas towns destroying saloon furnishings with an axe. At once there was great agitation, and tens of thousands of women held prayer-meetings and meditated following her example. A number of imitators sprang up, but law and public opinion quickly intervened to check the spread of the movement.

Mrs. Nation's crusade

In modern times financial crazes are a close second to religious crazes. The tulip mania is perhaps the strangest. "About the year 1634 the Dutch became suddenly possessed with a mania for tulips. The ordinary industry

Financial crazes. The tulip mania

[1] See "Cyclopædia of Methodism."

of the country was neglected, and the population, even to its lowest dregs, embarked in the tulip trade. The tulip rose rapidly in value, and when the mania was in full swing some daring speculators invested as much as one hundred thousand florins in the purchase of forty roots. The bulbs were as precious as diamonds; they were sold by their weight in *perits*, a weight less than a grain." "Regular marts for the sale of roots were established in all the large towns of Holland — in Amsterdam, Rotterdam, Haarlem, Leyden, Alkmaar. The stock jobbers dealt largely in tulips, and their profits were enormous. Many speculators grew suddenly rich. The epidemic of tulipomania raged with intense fury, the enthusiasm of speculation filled every heart, and confidence was at its height. A golden bait hung temptingly out before the people, and one after the other they rushed to the tulip marts like flies around a honey-pot. Every one imagined that the passion for tulips would last forever, and that the wealthy from every part of the world would send to Holland and pay whatever prices were asked for them. The riches of Europe would be concentrated on the shores of the Zuyder Zee. Nobles, citizens, farmers, mechanics, seamen, footmen, maid-servants, chimney-sweeps, and old-clothes women dabbled in tulips. Houses and lands were offered for sale at ruinously low prices, or assigned in payment of bargains made at the tulip market. So contagious was the epidemic that foreigners became smitten with the same frenzy, and money poured into Holland from all directions.

"This speculative mania did not last long; social suggestion began to work in the opposite direction, and a universal panic suddenly seized on the minds of the Dutch.

Instead of buying, every one was trying to sell. Tulips fell below their normal value. Thousands of merchants were utterly ruined, and a cry of lamentation rose in the land." [1]

Stampedes

In the same class may be placed the Mississippi Bubble, the South Sea Bubble, and the railway manias, real estate booms, and financial panics so frequent in the last century. Often movements to fields of opportunity show something of the stampede. The "Ho for Texas!" movement, the California gold fever, the negro exodus of 1879, the Klondike Rush, and the frequent mass migrations at the rumor of a rich "strike" in the mining country, rational as they are at bottom, owe something to the contagion of example. When, in the spring, the first boat down the Yukon brings news of so many millions of gold dust washed out, a certain number resolve for the Klondike. When, now, the sceptic learns in quick succession that his partner, his brother, his grocer, his dentist, and his neighbor are off to seek their fortunes, he becomes restless. The "fever" is in his blood. Something is pulling him, and the pull becomes stronger with every new recruit he hears of. When at length he joins the army of gold seekers, his example helps break down the resistance of some one else; and so there is a rush.

The "Great Fear"

The "Great Fear" in France in 1789 illustrates the craze. Says Stephens: [2] "The months of July and August may be called the months of the 'great fear.' Men were afraid, both in town and country, of they knew not what. How this universal feeling of terror arose cannot be proved, but it was actually deemed necessary in some districts for a distinct denial to be published to the report

[1] Sidis, "The Psychology of Suggestion," 343–345.

[2] "History of the French Revolution," I, 178–179.

that the king had paid brigands to rob the people." "This 'great fear' was generally expressed in the words 'The brigands are coming.' Who the brigands were, whence they came, or whither they were going, nobody knew; but that the brigands were coming, nobody doubted." "It was in the towns that this strange terror was most keenly felt. In the town of Gueret, July 29, 1789, was known for years after as the day of the 'great fear.' Suddenly, at about five in the afternoon of that day, a rumor arose that the brigands were coming. The women rushed out of the town and hid themselves in the thickets and ditches; while the men assembled at the Hôtel de Ville, and hastily formed themselves into an armed force to assist the town militia. Several notables of the town took their seats with the municipal officers and formed a committee, which sent despatches to all the neighboring towns and villages for aid. . . . These allies, to the number of 8000 to 10,000, flocked into the town, and were regaled at its expense; and when it was found that the brigands did not come, they all went home again. At Château-Thierry news arrived, on July 28, that 2500 'carabots,' or brigands, were marching along the Soissons road; the tocsin rang, and the bourgeois marched out to meet them. On their way a miller told them that the brigands had just sacked Bouresches, which was in flames; but when the partisans of order arrived there, the flames were found to be only the reflection of the sun upon the roofs of the houses. Then the brigands were descried in the act of crossing the Marne at Essommes; but when the tired pursuers came up, they found that these new brigands were the women of Essommes, who had been scared at their appearance and who believed them to be the real brigands."

In the present agitated, overwrought state of the Russian people there are occurring, no doubt, among the ignorant, superstitious masses mob-mind phenomena that will stupefy us with amazement once the veil is withdrawn and the facts become known.

The war spirit of '61

The tendency of the plane to extend and complete itself as the emotional temperature rises is seen in the sweeping of the war spirit over North and South after the firing on Fort Sumter. In the two sections psychic vortexes had gradually formed, rotating in opposite directions. With the sudden access of emotion after the shock of the first clash of arms, these vortexes rotated at a much higher speed and sucked into themselves many who hitherto had been indifferent or hostile. All but a vanishing remnant were affected with the emotion of their section. Say Nicolay and Hay:[1] "The guns of the Sumter bombardment woke the country from the political nightmare which had so long tormented and paralyzed it. The lion of the North was fully roused. Betrayed, insulted, outraged, the free States arose as with a cry of pain and vengeance. War sermons from pulpits; war speeches in every assemblage; tenders of troops; offers of money; military proclamations and orders in every newspaper; every city radiant with bunting; every village green a mustering ground; war appropriations in every legislature and in every city or town council; war preparations in every public or private workshop; gun casting in the great foundries; cartridge making in the principal towns; camps and drills in the fields; parades, drums, flags, and bayonets in the streets; knitting, bandage rolling, and lint scraping in nearly every household. Before the lapse of

[1] "Abraham Lincoln, A History," IV, 85–87.

forty-eight hours a Massachusetts regiment, armed and equipped, was on its way to Washington; within the space of a month the energy and intelligence of the country were almost completely turned from the industries of peace to the activities of war. The very children abandoned their old-time school games, and played only at soldiering." "'Ten days ago we had two parties in this State; to-day we have but one, and that one is for the Constitution and the Union unconditionally,' said Iowa. The war spirit rose above all anticipation, and the offer of volunteers went far beyond the call."

"In the Gulf States the revolutionary excitement rose to a similar height, but with contrary sentiment. All Union feeling and utterance vanished; and, overawed by a terrorism which now found its culmination, no one dared breathe a thought or scarcely entertain a hope for the old flag."

The laws of crazes

The laws of crazes may be formulated as follows: —

1. *The Craze takes Time to develop to its Height.* — The panic of 1893 began in April and reached its height in August, but socio-psychic phenomena began to manifest themselves only in 1894 in the form of the great sympathetic railway strike, labor riots, and the departure for the national capital of ten bodies of penniless unemployed "commonwealers" to petition Congress for work. The susceptibility of the public continued through 1896, and was responsible for the strong emotional currents in the presidential campaign of that year.

2. *The More Extensive its Ravages, the Stronger the Type of Intellect that falls a Prey to It.* — In the acute stages of a boom or a revival, even the educated, experienced, and hard-headed succumb. Perhaps no better

instance can be cited than the progress of a Messianic craze among the Jews. In 1666 a Jew named Sabbathai Zevi declared himself publicly as the long-expected Messiah. A maniacal ecstasy took possession of the Jewish mind. Men, women, and children fell into fits of hysterics. Business men left their occupations, workmen their trades, and devoted themselves to prayer and penitence. The synagogues resounded with sighs, cries, and sobs for days and nights together. All the rabbis who opposed the mania had to flee for their lives. The fame of Sabbathai spread throughout the world. In Poland, in Germany, in Holland, and in England, the course of business was interrupted on the Exchange by the gravest Jews breaking off to discuss this wonderful event. In Amsterdam the Jews marched through the streets, carrying with them rolls of the Torah, singing, leaping, and dancing, as if possessed. Scenes still more turbulent and wild occurred in Hamburg, Venice, Leghorn, Avignon, and many other cities. Learned men began to give in their adhesion. Everywhere prophets and prophetesses appeared, thus realizing the Jewish belief in the inspired nature of Messianic times. Men and women, boys and girls, in hysterical convulsions screamed praises to the new Messiah. At last, from all sides rich men came to Sabbathai, putting their wealth at his disposal. Many sold all they possessed and set out for Palestine. Traffic in the greatest commercial centres came to a complete standstill; most of the Jewish merchants and bankers liquidated their affairs. The belief in the divine mission of Sabbathai was made into a religious dogma of equal rank with that of the unity of God.[1]

[1] Sidis, "The Psychology of Suggestion," 327–329.

3. *The Greater its Height, the More Absurd the Propositions that will be believed or the Actions that will be done.* — At the zenith of the South Sea craze companies formed "to make deal boards out of sawdust," "for extracting silver from lead," "for a wheel of perpetual motion," "for furnishing funerals to any part of Great Britain," could sell stock. Finally one bold speculator started "a company for carrying on an undertaking of great advantage, but nobody to know what it is!"

4. *The Higher the Craze, the Sharper the Reaction from It.* — The prostration of a "busted boom" town is so extreme that its unboomed rivals forge ahead of it. The reaction from a purely emotional religious revival often leaves the cause of real religion worse off than it was at first. This perhaps is why experienced churches like the Roman Catholic have no use for revivals.

5. *One Craze is frequently succeeded by Another exciting Emotions of a Different Character.* — Says Jones:[1] "It is interesting to note that the emotions which have been generated by speculative excitement and intensified by panic depressions have been frequently transferred to religious subjects and have, in the United States at certain times, given rise to remarkable revivals of religion following close upon the heels of panics." "A contemporary account of the extraordinary revival movement of 1857 says: 'It was in October of this year (1857) that Mr. Lamphier, a missionary of the Dutch Reformed Church, thought, in his own heart, that an hour of daily prayer would bring consolation to afflicted business men.' In a few weeks those holding the meetings were astonished to find the crowds growing too large for the buildings. The Method-

[1] "Economic Crises," 209, 210.

ist Church on John Street and the Dutch Reformed Church on Fulton Street were opened daily. Next, Burton's Theatre was hired, and throughout the winter noonday prayer-meetings were held at numerous places in the city." "Even the firemen and policemen held their prayer-meetings, so that we may feel perfectly assured of the truth of what the writer says when he adds, 'It is doubtful whether under heaven was seen such a sight as went on in the city of New York in the winter and spring of the year 1857–1858.' 'From New York as a centre, the mysterious influence spread abroad till it penetrated all New England in the East, southward as far as Virginia, and even beyond, westward to Buffalo, Cincinnati, Chicago, St. Louis.'"

6. *A Dynamic Society is more Craze-ridden than One moving along the Ruts of Custom.* — In a dynamic society so many readjustments are necessary, such far-reaching transformations are experienced in half a lifetime, that the past is discredited. One forms a habit of breaking habits. Ancestral wisdom, the teachings of social experience are refuted and discarded at so many points that they lose their steadying power. The result is that instead of aping their forefathers, people ape the multitude.

It is a delusion to suppose that one who has broken the yoke of custom is emancipated. The lanes of custom are narrow, the hedge-rows are high, and view to right or left there is none. But there is as much freedom and self-direction in him who trudges along this lane as in the "emancipated" person, who finds himself in the open country free to pick a course of his own, but who, nevertheless, stampedes aimlessly with the herd. A dynamic society may, therefore, foster individuality no more than

a static society. But it *does* progress, and that, perhaps, ought to reconcile us to the mental epidemics that afflict us.

7. *Ethnic or Mental Homogeneity is Favorable to the Craze.* — The remarks of Giddings regarding like-mindedness and the crowd apply equally well here. Caste lines break the sweep of the craze. The English are proof against mob mind chiefly because they stand on such different levels. Americans are on a prairie. The English are on terraces. The gentleman, the shopkeeper, or the clerk looks with disdain upon an agitation spreading among workingmen, and instead of feeling drawn by the rush of numbers, is, in fact, repelled. Caste makes a society immune to craze, even if the remedy is worse than the disease.

Theory of the fad

The *fad* originates in the surprise or interest excited by novelty. Roller skating, blue glass, the planchette, a forty days' fast, tiddledy-winks, faith healing, the "13-14-15" puzzle, baseball, telepathy, or the sexual novel attract those restless folk who are always running hither and thither after some new thing. This creates a swirl which rapidly sucks into its vortex the soft-headed and weak-minded, and at last, grown bigger, involves even the saner kind. As no department of life is safe from the invasion of novelty, we have all kinds of fads: philosophic fads, like pessimism or anarchism; literary fads, like the Impressionists or the Decadents; religious fads, like spiritualism or theosophy; hygienic fads, like water-cure or breakfast foods; medical fads, like lymph or tuberculin; personal fads, like pet lizards or face enamel. And of these orders of fads each has a *clientèle* of its own.

In many cases we can explain vogue entirely in terms

of novelty fascination, and mass suggestion. But, even when the new thing can make its way by sheer merit, it does not escape becoming a fad. It still will have its penumbral ring of rapt imitators. So there is something of the fad even in bicycling, motoring, massage, antisepsis, and physical culture. Indeed, it is sometimes hard to distinguish faddism from the enthusiastic welcome and prompt acceptance accorded to a real improvement. For the undiscerning the only touchstone is time. Here, as elsewhere, "persistence in consciousness" is the test of reality. The mere novelty, soon ceasing to be novel, bores people, and must yield to a fresh sensation; a genuine improvement, on the other hand, meets a real need and therefore lasts.

Faddism or progress

Unlike the craze, the fad does not spread in a medium especially prepared for it by excitement. It cannot rely on the heightened suggestibility of people. Its conquests, therefore, imply something above mere volume of suggestion. They imply prestige. The fad owes half its power over minds to the prestige that in this age attaches to the new.

Why fads flourish nowadays

SUMMARY

With the new facilities for intercommunication the pressure of suggestion upon the mind of the individual may be greatly intensified.

From the interaction of innumerable minds results a *quasi*-unit known as "the public." The psychic plane into which the public draws its members is nearer their average than is the plane that forms in the crowd.

In the public the manifestations which most resemble those of the mob are the craze and the fad.

The craze takes time to develop its full power, is followed by a corresponding reaction, and frequently leaves minds susceptible to other types of craze.

Custom and caste are unfavorable to the craze.

The fad is the sudden brief focussing of general attention and interest upon the new. It occurs only in times or societies in which the new enjoys prestige.

EXERCISES

1. Trace the psychological history of a real estate "boom" in an infant but promising town.

2. Discriminate between open-mindedness and suggestibility.

3. May not a craze bring about a sympathy which may last after the craze has been forgotten? If so, is not the craze a socializing agent?

4. Which presents the greater obstacle to the social sweep of an idea or emotion — cultural difference (religion, education, etc.) or class difference? Why?

5. Why is it that a financial craze may bring in its train a religious craze, whereas the reverse is not true?

6. Compare in susceptibility to craze a hopeful, prosperous people with a hopeless, miserable people.

7. Show that the proverbial individualism of the farmer is not necessarily the same as individuality.

CHAPTER V

PROPHYLACTICS AGAINST MOB MIND

Mob folk destroy social stability

In his "Ninety-Three" Victor Hugo describes a mounted cannon broken loose in the hold of a vessel on the high seas. With every lurch the huge gun rolls helplessly about, wrecking the interior, and threatening to send the ship to the bottom with a hole through her side. This pictures the situation of the society with a large number of mob folk in it, making a wild lunge, now here, now there, as events call up this feeling or that. In a community the prevalence of such a type leads to all manner of folly — Millerism, "holy rolling," vegetarianism, wonderworking shrines, divine healers, table-tipping séances, frenzied religious revivals, land booms, speculations and panics, the Belgian hare mania, and the walking craze, ending in people crowding to watch rival female pedestrians try to walk one thousand quarter miles in one thousand consecutive quarter hours! In a nation it leads to political "tidal waves" producing a dangerous rhythm in the conduct of public affairs, to a costly wavering in dealing with money or tariff, to a fickle sentimental foreign policy, and to war fevers tending, perhaps, to national humiliation and loss of prestige.

Since it is the concern of organized society to lessen its burden of mob folk, let us consider the various conditions that favor the growth of strong, robust individualities proof against mental contagion.

Education for criticism

1. *Higher Education.* — Up to a certain point education fosters mob mind by opening the mind to novel ideas before the critical faculty has been strengthened. The power to value ideas lagging far behind the power to absorb them, the individual, left rudderless, is obliged to drift with the current. Now, a college education is not simply four more high-school years. It ought to equip the student with standards and tests of objective truth. It ought to require him to dig down past the walls of some science to the bed-rock it rests on, so that he may learn in what mortar and by what plumb-line the stones of that science have been laid. Once he has been obliged to lay one little stone in the top course of a single turret of his science, he will ever after appreciate the difference between science and humbug, truth and opinion, scholarship and quackery, faddism and progress. When there is, in every community, a handful of well-ballasted college men and women, how often will be stayed the sweep of the popular delusion — rain making, Second Coming, spiritualism, absent treatment, and the like!

How to become crank proof

2. *Sound Knowledge of Body, Mind, and Society.* — Hygiene, psychology, and sociology can ward off more folly than astronomy, physics, or geology. For body, mind, and society are the storm-centres of faddism, the breeding grounds of manias. To be folly-proof here is to be fortified against nine-tenths of the higher foolishness. The reason why cranks haunt these three topics is that they are of supreme human interest. The prizes that can be held out for the adoption of the Kneipp cure, theosophy, or some social Utopia are the most-desired things in the world — immunity from disease, from sin, and from poverty.

3. *Familiarity with that which is Classic.* — One ought to know the intellectual kings of the human race — Job, Solomon, Æschylus, Plato, Cervantes, Bacon, Montaigne, Shakespeare, Swift, Goethe, Burns. The first-rank minds that for centuries have been able to impress the generations with their universal appeal are all choice, sane spirits, able to rescue one from the sway of the sensational and ephemeral. Excellent are the winnowings of time. "Whenever I am urged to read a new book," says the sage, "I re-read an old one." Moreover, acquaintance with the very best in thought and literature helps one justly to rate the things that people run after, and to ignore the "Lo here!" "Lo there!" of the false prophets.

Steadying influence of the classic

4. *The Influence of Sane Teachers.* — A university is not, as some insist, "a collection of books." Books are of all dates and values, and hence indiscriminate, omnivorous reading is no furnisher of sound ideas. Guidance by the specialist is needful. President Garfield's ideal of a college, "Mark Hopkins on the other end of a log," recognizes the educative value of contact with a master-mind. The greatest teachers — Hopkins, Agassiz, McCosh, Jowett, Thomas Hill Green — are just those who, by throwing the student on his own resources, bring to ripeness his individuality. The genuine teacher wants fellows, not disciples, and his happiest hour is when he finds that the cub he has trained is now able to hold him at bay.

Ozone from the peaks

5. *Avoidance of the Sensational Newspaper.* — The howling dervishes of journalism propagate crazes and fads by distorting the significance of the moment. The valuable new is, in fact, but a slender fringe along the vast expanse of the valuable old. It is a hundred to one

Shun the dithyrambic press

that the old classic is worth more than "the book of the month." Old wit, condensed into homely maxims about cleanliness, avoiding draughts, keeping the feet warm and the head cool, save a thousand lives where the new wrinkles in medicine or surgery — which make newspaper "copy" — save a dozen. Now, this static side of life is ignored by the yellow press. By exaggerating the *news* it presents things in a false perspective. It can capture the public's pennies by exploiting the unique, the startling, even the imaginary. Therefore, to keep readers on the tiptoe of expectation, it promises something extraordinary which is always just on the eve of happening, — but doesn't happen! The Czar is about to be blown up, the Kaiser is just going mad, a cure for consumption is ready to be given to humanity, the flying machine is soon to displace the bicycle, or the manufacture of weather is about to begin! So the jaded nerves are kept on the perpetual thrill, and, looking always for something wonderful to turn up, the deluded reader goes on and on like a donkey reaching for the sheaf of oats tied to the end of his wagon pole. Moreover, the constant flitting from topic to topic brings upon the confirmed newspaper reader what we may call *paragraphesis, i.e.*, inability to hold the mind on a subject for any length of time. Reading so inimical to poise, self-control, and mental concentration as the sensational newspaper should be cut down to a minimum.

Sport trains to inhibition

6. *Sports.* — Physical health in itself makes for intellectual self-possession. Frequently sickness heightens suggestibility, which may in part account for the "cures" at wonderworking shrines, and the successes of magnetic healers. The will made on a sick-bed lies under the just

suspicion of "undue influence," in case it favors those who had access to the testator at the time. There is a peculiar value, however, in participation in sports and athletic contests, for these produce moral as well as physical tone. The effort not to "break training," the overruling of the impulse to give up at moments of weariness or discouragement, the subordination of one's playing to the team work that gives another man the showy plays that win applause, the keeping of one's temper under hard knocks, modest self-restraint in victory, and, above all, the "game" spirit in defeat, *i.e.*, the mastery of the impulse to whine or cry "unfair," or show chagrin, — these triumphs of the will over impulse undoubtedly conduce to the triumph of the will over suggestion. If "the battle-fields of England are won on the football fields of Eton and Rugby," it is because the coolness of the British officer in a Dervish charge or an Afghan rush is the same imperturbability that the seasoned football player attains when, amid the cheers of excited thousands, he thinks quickly and decides unerringly what is to be done.

Stability of the country bred

7. *Country Life.* — The city overwhelms the mind with a myriad of impressions which fray the nerves and weaken the power of concentration. One comes at last not to hear the din or see the street signs but, nevertheless, the subconscious is noting them and the store of nervous energy is being depleted. City-bred populations are liable to be hysterical, and to be hysterical is to be suggestible. Well does Emerson[1] remark, "A sturdy lad from New Hampshire or Vermont, who in turn tries all the professions, who *teams it, farms it, peddles,* keeps a

[1] Essay on Self-reliance.

school, preaches, edits a newspaper, goes to Congress, buys a township, and so forth in successive years, and always, like a cat, falls on his feet, is worth a hundred of these city dolls." In cities, with cuts and fills and asphalt, the human will visibly dominates the physical environment, and men come readily to the cardinal assumption of the mob, that nothing can stand against numbers. In the country painful contact with the unyielding laws of nature inspires reasonableness and caution. The mob's sense of invincibility can hardly spring up among people under the unremitting necessity of adapting their efforts to huge implacable forces. In the city some ways of living foster suggestibility, while others check it. It is bad for people to be crowded into barrack-like tenement-houses, for such massing inspires the cheese-mite consciousness, makes the self count for nothing. The best correctives for urban propinquity are broad streets, numerous parks, and the individual domicile with a little space about it; for these preserve the selfhood of the family group and of the individual.

Fireside or *café*

8. *Familism.* — Close relations to a few people — as in the well-knit family — joined to a vivid sense of obligation to the community, seem to be more favorable to stable character than the loose touch-and-go associations of general intercourse. The Northern peoples, obliged by climate to centre their lives in the circle about the fireside, are more resistant to popular currents than the Southern peoples, passing their leisure in the buzz of the street, the *plaza*, and the *foyer*. Worshippers of the spirit of the hearth, they are more aloof from their fellows, slower therefore to merge with them or be swept from their moorings by them. It seems to be communion by

the fireside rather than communion in the public resort that gives individuality long bracing roots. The withdrawn social self, although it lacks breadth, gains in depth, and there is nothing to show that the talkative, sociable, impressionable Latin will sacrifice himself more readily for the public weal than the hedged, reserved Englishman.

Property is a tether peg hindering stampede

9. *Ownership of Property.* — The protection and care of a piece of property makes for thoughtfulness and steadiness, individualizes. One recipe for building character in a boy is to give him a plot and let him keep what he can raise on it, give him a colt and let him have its growth in value. This property, so responsive to care or to neglect, is a standing challenge to his self-control. It admonishes him to look ahead, to plan, to sacrifice, to overrule his impulses to idle, procrastinate, or day-dream. The city parent, having nothing of this sort he can make over to his boy, is puzzled how he shall make a man of him.

A wide diffusion of land ownership has long been recognized as fostering a stable and conservative political habit. "The magic of property turns sand into gold," said Arthur Young. It also turns hinds into men. An industrial or mining population, unsteadied by ownership, is altogether more easily drawn into impulsive mass action than a proprietary farming population. The man owns his home, but in a sense his home owns him, checking his rash impulses, holding him out of the human whirlpool, ever saying inaudibly, "Heed me, care for me, or you lose me!" With the growth of great corporation-held properties in which the individual has only a fractional ownership, property ceases to contribute much to the individualizing of persons. Its rôle is probably on the wane.

Voluntary association disciplines the impulses

10. *Participation in Voluntary Association.* — The acknowledged political capacity of the English has been attributed to the experience of the masses in their popular religious organizations, *i.e.*, the dissenting churches. Participation in the management of a society develops acquaintance with the rules of discussion, tolerance of opponents, love of order, and readiness to abide by the will of the majority. Above all, it teaches people to rate the windbag, the ranter, or the sophist at his true worth, and to value the less showy qualities of the man of judgment and reason. None have a greater contempt for mob mind and for the wild and whirling words of the stampeder than those who have long worked in voluntary associations. Town-meetings, religious societies, fraternal organizations, labor-unions, granges, women's clubs, and similar societies, by diffusing the qualities for deliberative association, diminish the amount of inflammable material in the community.

Let stability be honored

11. *Intellectual Self-possession as an Ideal.* — The types of character held up to youth as models should be strong in point of self-control. Self-consistency, tranquillity, balance, robust independence, should be recognized as rare and precious qualities worthy of all honor and praise. Let fad and craze be made ridiculous. Honor virile will more than the commoner excellences of heart and head. Writers like Emerson, Thoreau, and Whitman make intellectual individualism attractive by showing that "Bear ye one another's burdens" does not mean "Share ye one another's delusions."

Pride *vs.* love as moral mainspring

12. *Prideful Morality.* — There are two bases of spontaneous right doing, neighbor love and self-respect. Right conduct prompted by the sense of self-respect and

honor seems to preserve selfhood more than if it springs from the sense of a common life with one's fellows. Powerful individualities are more apt to be inspired to goodness by self-respect than by brotherly affection. Haughty nobles develop among themselves a morality that has its mainspring in honor, and there is no question that the basis of morality in modern society is more akin to the pride of the mediæval castle than to the humility of the mediæval monastery.[1] Sympathy and fraternalism must, of course, constitute the emotional background to the moral life; but in the advance of individualization the true line is to awaken a sense of worth and dignity in the common man, and to hinge his social and civic duties on self-respect rather than on the spirit of the hive.

Flee yellow religion

13. *Vital Religion.* — A religion for life and work is more individualizing than a contemplative devotional one, and a religion that means the domination of one's life by some principle of responsibility or some ideal of character braces the soul more than an emotional religion that charms the heart to goodness by appeals and examples. Introspective devotionalism is enervating. The remarks of Coe[2] help us realize that there is a yellow religion to contend with as well as a yellow journalism.

"To take feeling out of religion would be as absurd as to take parental or conjugal fondness out of the family. Yet it is not possible to maintain the family solely, or even chiefly, by reliance upon feelings. . . . Religion ought to rest upon and call into exercise all the faculties of the mind, and no superior sanctity should be ascribed to persons whose temperamental make-up is sentimental rather

[1] See Ross, "Social Control," 236–242.
[2] "The Spiritual Life," 215–217.

than choleric. . . . Preserve the equilibrium between sensibility and will. When this equilibrium is lost, in rushes a tide of religious vagaries. At a camp-meeting in western New York a number of years ago a brother testified somewhat as follows: 'Brethren, I feel — I feel — I feel — I feel that I feel — I can't tell you how I feel, but O I feel! I feel!'

"Says a prominent pastor: 'There are in my church two distinct classes of members. On the one hand, there is a group of substantial persons of high character and agreeable conduct who support the enterprises of the church with their money, but are rarely or never seen at prayer-meeting. One never sees them prostrated before God in earnest prayer. If a sinner should come weeping to the altar, they would not gather around to pray for him. If he should rise shouting, they would shake hands with him and tell him they were glad he had started, but that is all. On the other hand, there is a class of members who can be relied upon to be present at the prayer-meeting, who would rush to the altar to pray with the sinner, and who, if he should rise shouting, would scarcely know whether they were in the body or out of the body. Nevertheless, these persons are without influence in spite of their unction. They are flighty and changeable in their moods, lack organization, and their judgment is not to be trusted. If I were to go on a long journey, I would not choose them for companions, but rather persons of the former description. And if I were to go sailing in a small boat, I would not take one of these prayer-meeting members with me, lest he should have a spell of some sort and capsize the boat.'"

SUMMARY

No education is complete that fails to provide one with truth-filters.

Against the folly of craze and fad one is forearmed who possesses exact knowledge of the matter in question.

No work becomes an acknowledged classic which is not wholesome in tone and universal in appeal. The foundations of one's culture should therefore be laid in the classics.

By exaggerating everything in the foreground, the sensational newspaper predisposes the reader to craze and fad.

A reasonable participation in wholesome competitive sports involving team work strengthens self-control.

It is difficult to build a stable individuality in the city-bred.

Self-sufficing home-life, although it narrows the sympathies, favors depth of character.

The responsibilities of ownership are steadying.

The appeal to self-respect and honor individualizes.

A purely emotional religion leads to flabbiness.

EXERCISES

1. Distinguish between suggestibility and sociality.

2. How does the experience of responsibility affect one's responsiveness to mental contagion? Why?

3. Compare manual training with literary studies as a developer of objectivity and self-control.

4. What are the reactions upon character of boys' clubs, playground self-government, the George Junior Republic, etc.?

5. Compare business with industry in its effect on one's power to resist suggestion.

6. What special reason is there why in the United States mental epidemic has shown itself more in the rural than in the urban population?

7. Study the religious currents of the Reformation epoch, and find by what means certain sects were able to escape the follies, fanaticisms, and crazes of the time and become the parents of the great Protestant denominations.

CHAPTER VI

FASHION

Fashion is not progressive

FASHION is a series of recurring changes in the choices of a group of people which, though they may be accompanied by utility, are not determined by it. The fact that the new departure is not made because it is *better* differentiates the changes that constitute *progress* from those which constitute *fashion*. Fashion is marked by rhythmic imitation and innovation, by alternate uniformity and change, but neither of these phases obeys the principle of utility. The prevalence of fountain-pens or alarm-clocks is due to utility. The telephone and the cash register are universal, but not fashionable. The ornamental tiles of a fireplace may be a fashion, but not the tiles of a bathroom floor. Progress follows the line of advantage, substituting always the better adapted; it never returns on itself, never substitutes fish-oil for kerosene, horse-cars for trolley cars. Fashion, on the other hand, moves in cycles. Could we run the successive fashions of woman's hat or sleeve or skirt during a century through a biograph rapidly, what a systole and diastole we should see, an alternating dilation and contraction like the panting of some queer animal!

A style is a uniformity of practice, but it may or may not imply a psychic uniformity, *i.e.*, an agreement of belief or feeling. So far as the hoop-skirt is believed to be the best possible garment, or is felt to be becoming and

feminine, its vogue concerns social psychology. But so far as women without illusions about it wear the hideous thing to avoid being conspicuous, or to get the prestige of "stylish," the practice has no psychic plane behind it, and it does not interest the social psychologist. In general, Veblen is right when he says: "So long as it is a novelty, people very generally find the new style attractive. The prevailing fashion is felt to be beautiful. This is due partly to the relief it affords in being different from what went before it, partly to its being reputable. . . . The canon of reputability to some extent shapes our tastes, so that under its guidance anything will be accepted as becoming until its novelty wears off, or until the warrant of reputability is transferred to a new and novel structure serving the same general purpose. That the alleged beauty, or 'loveliness,' of the styles in vogue at any given time is transient and spurious only is attested by the fact that none of the many shifting fashions will bear the test of time. When seen in the perspective of half a dozen years or more, the best of our fashions strike us as grotesque if not unsightly."[1] "A fancy bonnet of this year's model unquestionably appeals to our sensibilities to-day much more forcibly than an equally fancy bonnet of the model of last year. . . . The high gloss of a gentleman's hat or of a patent-leather shoe has no more of intrinsic beauty than a similarly high gloss on a threadbare sleeve; and yet there is no question but that all well-bred people (in the Occidental civilized communities) instinctively and unaffectedly cleave to the one as a phenomenon of great beauty, and eschew the other as offensive to every sense to which it can appeal. It is extremely doubtful if any

Outward conformity usually betokens an inward conformity

[1] "The Theory of the Leisure Class," 177.

one could be induced to wear such a contrivance as the high hat of civilized society, except for some urgent reason based on other than æsthetic grounds." [1]

Fashion springs from the passion for self-individualization

Whatever the illusions it may create, the ultimate *raison d'être* of fashion is the passion for self-individualization. It is eagerness to distinguish one's self from one's fellows that makes even savages so fond of ornament. This is one secret of the enormous profits of trade with unsophisticated peoples. If their vanity is shrewdly played upon, they will strip themselves of everything valuable they possess in return for small quantities of bright beads, tinsel, gaudy ribbons, and prints, which may serve them as means of self-individualization. On some of the South Sea Islands early travellers found that while no one would give anything for new kinds of fowls, domestic animals, or useful devices, "a few red feathers would buy the whole island." At first the mark of distinction most preferred is a trophy of the chase or war — head-dress of eagle's feathers, necklace of bear's teeth or claws, girdle of scalps, bracelets of the jawbone or clavicle of one's foes. These document one's prowess. The trophy, to have any virtue, must be genuine — an evidence of the wearer's prowess, and not of the prowess of another. Hence trophies bought or inherited confer no honor. Eventually the idea of embellishment arises, and with it a host of objects which are not trophies come to be worn. These artificial ornaments are at first attached to the body, and hence evidence how much pain the wearer has consented to endure. Labrets and nose-rings, like the honorable face-scars the German student duellist is so proud of, show one's grit. With the growth

[1] "The Theory of the Leisure Class," 131.

of dress, ornament attached to the person gradually yields to ornament attached to the dress, the more painful ornament-carrying mutilations being abandoned first. This shows that man is not, after all, quite an irrational being; occasionally he evinces a scintilla of common sense. The greater conservatism of woman makes her persist in ornament, even mutilation (ear piercing, waist pinching), after man has totally abandoned such folly. But in such conservative relations as warrior, officer, or courtier, man still wears ornaments. Starr finds that "ornament dwindles with progress toward a true civilization," that "there is no place for ornament in a true democracy," and that "a revival of ornament indicates a retardation of democratic ideas."

The passion for inequality lies very deep in human nature, and we Americans have our share. Brooks says:[1] "The lack of sympathy with heroic and unselfish attempts to realize equality is itself evidence of the common dislike of equality. One of the later experiments, at Ruskin, Tennessee, for which great hopes had been felt, has met disaster. I have gathered many opinions from the press, but among them all no kindly note of appreciation. Has the world at heart a fixed, unconscious hatred of equality?"

The self-differentiating impulse is still powerful

"Heraldry now is a charmed word for multitudes of very humble people. Librarians are suddenly plagued by the importunity for genealogical evidence of distinguished ancestry. Daughters of this and daughters of that; clubs, coteries, everywhere springing into life, bound to discover proof that they are not quite like other people. I saw a Colonial Dame flushed with delight be-

[1] "The Social Unrest," 233–236.

cause on a great occasion in another city her badge had given her showy precedence over certain of the Daughters of the Revolution, who at home never failed to let her feel her social inferiority. She said, 'In all my life no minute ever gave me a joy like that.' [1] The women need have no shame, they cannot outdo the men in this pursuit. Scarcely a town that is not gay with embellished orders stamped with every display of royal and knightly nomenclature. Read the list of officers from the Sublime Grand Master down, and ask what aristocracy in history ever went farther in its hunt for feathers. Two or three years ago there was a gathering of three or four orders in Boston. From a single copy of the *Herald* I take the following modest titles, — Grand Dictator, Grand Chancellor, Supreme President, Grand Vice Dictator, Supreme Warden. This outbreak is a droll commentary upon a society that has found so much to ridicule in the 'haughty infirmities' of the Old World. It has sprung, however, straight from human nature.[2] We have won wealth and some leisure that have brought us into contact with foreign sources of distinction that we lack. No people ever displayed the passion for inequality more greedily than we. One builds a yacht, and if he can dine an English prince at the Cowes races, or entice the German emperor on board at Kiel, this single breath of royal atmosphere at once endows the enterprising host with

[1] She calls to mind the lady who assured Herbert Spencer that the consciousness of being perfectly well dressed gave her "a peace such as religion cannot give."

[2] "When a man has discovered why men in Bond Street wear black hats, he will at the same moment have discovered why men in Timbuctoo wear red feathers." — CHESTERTON, "Heretics," 143.

the rarest social privileges at home. Every circle breaks at the touch of the king's hand.

"This craving to index one's self off from others, by any mark that can be hit upon, is not very vicious, perhaps not always bad, but it is the essence of inequality and shows how rooted an instinct it is within us. I asked the head of a fashionable city school about the parents that brought their daughters to her. 'It is,' she said, 'so unusual as to surprise me when a parent shows any other real anxiety than to secure for her child certain social connections. Education has no meaning except as it furthers this end.' If this is snobbish, what is it for working-girls' clubs to exclude household domestics? I have known Boston shop-girls at their dances to put up a placard marked 'No servants admitted.' No social group that can be named is free from this itching."

Democracy recognizes certain kinds of inequality

The healthy democratic spirit does not deny that there are important worth-differences among people, nor does it frown upon the passion for self-individualization. Its point of insistence is that the worth-degrees recognized by society ought to relate primarily to intellect, character, and achievement, rather than to apparel and equipage. The idea is that the attributes taken as the basis of social distinction should be deep-lying rather than superficial, important rather than trivial.

The fashion process has two movements

Fashion consists of (1) *imitation*, (2) *differentiation*. In imitation, the inferior asserts his equality with the superior by copying him in externals. But this endeavor of the inferiors to assimilate themselves upward is countered by the effort of the superiors to differentiate themselves afresh from their inferiors by changing the style. The prompter the imitation of the inferior, the more frequently

must a new fashion be launched. The death of a fashion is seen when feather boas go out as soon as the domestics have come to adopt them; when ladies renounce the bicycle because the servant girl has one. The terms "gentleman" and "lady" are abandoned as soon as common people employ them profusely.[1] Then it is remarked how "noble" are the ancient terms "man" and "woman"! When the barber and the fortune-teller call themselves "Professor," the members of the college faculty discover the "simple dignity" that lies in the appellation "Mr." The impulse to differentiate has been stimulated by the disappearance of class costume and the coming in of democratic competition. The fountains of the great deep have broken forth, and the artisan's wife on the frontier of civilization follows closely the Paris fashions. Thus Bryce[2] observes: "I remember to have been dawdling in a bookstore in a small town in Oregon, when a lady entered to inquire if a monthly magazine, whose name was unknown to me, had yet arrived. When she was gone I asked the salesman who she was and what was the periodical she wanted. He answered that she was the wife of a railway workman, that the magazine was a journal of fashions, and that the demand for such journals was large and constant among women of the wage-earning class in the town. This set me to observing female dress more closely, and it turned out to be perfectly true that the women in these little towns were

[1] To a Baltimore hospital was brought a negress with a bad bite on the back of her neck. While dressing it the surgeon remarked: "I can't imagine what animal made this wound. It is too large for the bite of a cat or dog and too small for the bite of a horse." "'Deed, suh," exclaimed the patient, "it wa'n't no animal at all. It wuz anudder lady!"

[2] "The American Commonwealth," II, ch. CIV.

following the Parisian fashions very closely and were, in fact, ahead of the majority of English ladies belonging to the professional and mercantile classes."

The suppression of competitive consumption

There have existed societies in which the inferior were not allowed presumptuously to vie with the superior. "In old Japan," says Hearn,[1] "sumptuary laws probably exceeded in multitude and minuteness anything of which Western legal history yields record." "Every class of Japanese society was under sumptuary regulation." "The nature of them is best indicated by the regulations applying to the peasantry. Every detail of the farmer's existence was prescribed for by law, — from the size, form, and cost of his dwelling, down even to such trifling matters as the number and the quality of the dishes to be served to him at meal-times." "A farmer with a property assessed at twenty *koku* (of rice) was not allowed to build a house more than thirty-six feet long, or to use in building it such superior qualities of wood as *keyaki* or *hinoki*. The roof of his house was to be made of bamboo thatch or straw; and he was strictly forbidden the comfort of floor mats. On the occasion of the wedding of his daughter he was forbidden to have fish or any roasted food served at the wedding feast. The women of his family were not allowed to wear leather sandals: they might wear only straw sandals or wooden clogs; and the thongs of the sandals or the clogs were to be made of cotton. Women were further forbidden to wear hair bindings of silk, or hair ornaments of tortoise-shells; but they might wear wooden combs and combs of bone — not ivory. The men were forbidden to wear stockings, and their sandals were to be made of bamboo. They were also forbidden

[1] "Japan: An Interpretation," 182, 184, 186.

to use sunshades, or paper umbrellas." "In Izumo I found that, prior to Meiji, there were sumptuary laws prescribing not only the material of the dresses to be worn by the various classes, but even the colors of them, and the designs of the patterns. The size of rooms, as well as the size of houses, was fixed there by law, — also the height of buildings and of fences, the number of windows, the material of construction."

The disappearance of sumptuary laws

Certain restrictions on the consumption of the lower classes prevailed in Europe during the later Middle Ages. Long since, however, these bulwarks to upper-class pride have been swept away, and there is now no station in life from which a person may not aspire to resemble those of a higher station.

Caste inhibits competitive consumption

In immobile caste societies the inferior does not think of aping the superior, and hence the superior is not obliged to devise new styles. Says Veblen:[1] "Certain relatively stable styles and types of costume have been worked out in various parts of the world; as, for instance, among the Japanese, Chinese, and other Oriental nations; likewise among the Greeks, Romans, and other Eastern peoples of antiquity; so also, in later times, among the peasants of nearly every country of Europe. These national or popular costumes are in most cases adjudged by competent critics to be more becoming, more artistic, than the fluctuating styles of modern civilized apparel. At the same time they are also, at least usually, less obviously wasteful; . . . They belong in countries and localities and times where the population, or at least the class to which the costume in question belongs, is relatively homogeneous, stable, and immobile. That is to say, stable

[1] "The Theory of the Leisure Class," 175.

costumes which will bear the test of time and perspective are worked out under circumstances where the norm of conspicuous waste asserts itself less imperatively than it does in the large modern civilized cities, whose relatively mobile, wealthy population to-day sets the pace in matters of fashion."

Acceleration of the fashion process in a commercialized democracy

In our society acquired social values prevail over hereditary social values. The phrase "in the swim" gives a hint of the unstable medium in which one must support one's self. The style of living, therefore, quickly affects social standing, and we have no reason to marvel that so much rivalry is centred in this sphere. In feudal society one did not enhance his good repute so much by profuse expenditure as by scrupulous abstinence from all productive employment — "the performance of leisure," as Veblen aptly terms it. But when, with the prosperity of the towns, the principal incomes come from city commerce rather than from country estates, the basis of social grading comes to be *conspicuous consumption* rather than *conspicuous leisure;* for merchant princes and bankers, unlike rent receivers, must attend to business. They cannot delegate their affairs. Hence commercial aristocracies — such as those of Venice, Genoa, Florence, and Antwerp — are distinguished for a sumptuous manner of life, far more splendid than that of the feudal lords. It was they, in fact, who taught the feudal lords to dismiss their useless retainers and surround themselves with luxury. Now, ours is a hustle civilization, in which ostentatious idling enjoys no such social consideration as it did in the decadence of feudal society. Hence, a cut-throat competition for distinction is concentrated on style of living. Social racing, the endeavor of the inferior to ape

the superior and of the superior to elude him by side-stepping or setting a hotter pace, becomes ever more frantic and taxing.[1]

Why fashions are becoming less stable

Fashions, consequently, are becoming less and less stable. Once fashion changed slowly. "Patching" stayed in a century, so also did the pointed shoes of Richard II. But, owing to the great abundance and cheapness of textile materials, the imitative power of the inferior has been greatly augmented. The wealth of society is great enough to permit the waste of fashion. A larger and larger share of its resources may be squandered in vying for social distinction. Formerly, garments were handed down from parents to children, and putting them aside in obedience to fashion would have been quite too prodigal; even now fashion staggers at fine lace, cashmere shawls, Persian rugs, etc. Again, the technique of imitation has improved. Says Sombart:[2] "It is one of the master tricks of our manufacturers for making their wares more salable to give them the appearance of those objects which enter into the consumption of a higher social stratum. It is the greatest pride of the clerk to wear the same shirts as the capitalist, of a servant girl to put on the same jacket as my lady, of Mrs. Butcher to own the same plush furniture as Mrs. Privy Councillor. This striving is as old as social differentiation, but never could it be so gratified as in our time when there are no longer limits to clever imitation, when, whatever the costliness of the material

[1] When more than half of San Francisco was wiped out, it was noticed that many did not feel their losses as much as might have been anticipated. One reason was that the losses were so universal that the losers suffered in creature comforts but not in social consideration. All were in the same boat, so there was no place for envy.

[2] "Das moderne Kapitalismus," II, 343–344.

or the elaborateness of the form, a counterfeit can soon be put on the market at a tenth of the original price.

"Again, note the promptness — thanks to newspapers, fashion journals, travel, etc. — with which a new style becomes known to everybody.[1] When, a few years ago, the drummer unpacked his sample case in some out-of-the-way town, a circle of gaping spectators formed, and one exclamation of admiration after another escaped their lips. Now it is, 'Excuse me, but I recently read in my paper of such and such a style, you don't seem to have it here at all, my dear sir!' So, scarcely has the long ladies' paletot (cost $20) penetrated to the knowledge of the belles of a provincial town, before the local merchants will be offering 'the same thing exactly' at $7.50. When with much trouble is devised a summer-shirt style that not every young fellow can afford, — the unstarched colored shirt with the attached cuffs, — the next summer

[1] Says Miss Moss (*Atlantic*, 94, p. 265): "Addison's *Spectator* tells how 'a fashion makes its progress much slower into Cumberland than Cornwall. I have heard that the Steenkirk (a military cravat dating from the battle nineteen years before) arrived but two months ago at Newcastle.' In sober truth, it took longer for Edinburgh to hear the news of Waterloo than it now does for Freeland, Pennsylvania, to learn that white was worn at the Grand Prix. After that Freeland also wore white until an English duchess came out in scarlet, upon which, by some magic *tour de force* in the dry-goods trade, Freeland immediately turned geranium color. Formerly, even in great cities, a fashion required some time to permeate the masses; now a fresh mode strikes the whole continent broadside, reaching all classes simultaneously. The Plaza, Madison Avenue, the Tenderloin, and Rivington Street all wear the same costume at Easter, varying only in fineness of material, not a whit in general effect. The cunningest Heloise or Annette in her Fifth Avenue 'Petit Paris,' strive as she may, cannot keep her one-hundred-and-fifty-dollar 'confection' one little move ahead of apparel marked 'Four ninety-eight' in Fourteenth Street, and 'One ninety-eight' on the Bowery."

every shop will carry fancy shirts of just the same pattern at 25 cents apiece. One who, in the possession of a walking-stick with silver-mounted handle, feels at last secure from the rivalry of the vulgar sees the next day the same thing with a cheap pewter handle offered at a quarter. Thus springs up a veritable steeplechase after new patterns and materials. This rapid vulgarization of every novelty forces those who take a proper pride in themselves to think constantly on devising new styles. This mad hunt for novelties becomes wilder and wilder with every advance in the technique of production and distribution."

Distinctive features of modern fashion

The characteristics of modern fashion as distinguished from earlier fashion are: —

1. *The Immense Number of Objects to which it Extends.* — It touches cravats, umbrellas, walking-sticks, visiting-cards, note-paper, toilet articles, docking horses' tails, the high check-rein, the pug, the exaggerated bulldog, the German poodle "raised under a bureau," "a dog-and-a-half long and half-a-dog high!"

2. *The Uniformity of Fashion.* — In the Renaissance period fashion was limited to a single city or class. Now it knows no territorial or class limits. There is only one fashion at a time. The women look to Paris, the men look to London. If the Prince of Wales forgets his watch and shows himself in his opera box with no chain, every watch chain in the house disappears by the close of the first act.

3. *The Maddening Tempo of the Changes of Fashion.* — A wave of fashion passes downward through all ranks and outward to the rim of the Occident with ever greater speed. Hence the waves must be more frequent if the superiors are to differentiate themselves successfully, and

so the pulsations are ever swifter. In ladies' fashions there are sometimes four or five changes in a season.

The rebellion against fashion

But there are influences undermining this tyranny. People may conform to a fashion to assimilate themselves to the superior, or in order not to be conspicuous. The latter class change as tardily as they dare and as little as they can. Their influence, therefore, is against extravagances of style and against frequent changes. They are always on the rear slope of the wave dragging it down. Since the number of such people of independent judgment, good taste, and appreciation of health and comfort is increasing, they will in time outnumber the pace setters, conformists, and fashionables. Already we have dropped such irrational badges of social standing as feet pinching, nose-rings, labrets, cheek slits, flattened crania, and other mutilations. Choking collars, high heels, trains, and face painting[1] will likewise go. The plane of intelligence and good sense is rising. From 1855 to 1865 all the women, including as sweet women as ever lived, wore the crinoline. Twice since then its return has been decreed, and twice the monstrosity has been beaten back into limbo. Not that we are to look for any immediate let-up in social competition; but the growing body of independent people will reduce the instability, tyranny, extravagance, hideousness,

[1] After all, we have come some distance from what Mrs. Bent saw in Arabia. "I never saw such dreadful objects as the women make of themselves by painting their faces. When they lift their veils one would hardly think them human. I saw eyes painted to resemble blue and red fish, with their heads pointing to the girl's nose. The upper part of the face was yellow, the lower green with small black spots, a green stripe down the nose, the nostrils like two red cherries, the paint being shiny. Three red stripes were on the forehead, and there was a red mustache, there being also green stripes on the yellow cheeks." — "Southern Arabia," 123.

and irrationality of fashion, and thus cause social distinction to be sought and won in other ways. A growing loathing for allotting social esteem according to purely factitious and superficial tests and an increasing respect for achievement and inner worth will blunt the keenness of the struggle for external conformity. It is not to be forgotten that up to the nineteenth century men were more slaves of fashion than women. They were emancipated by the democratic movement, which broke the back of male fashionableness by inducing the upper classes to accept the plain frock-coat of the bourgeoisie.

Liberalization of costume

Much can be done by association in dress reform. By coöperating radicals can keep one another in courage and countenance. The growing resort to athletics by women accustoms to unconventional and comfortable costume for gymnasium, tennis, rowing, cycling, and bathing, and thereby narrows the sway of fashion. The male competition that must be sustained by business and professional women also compels the rationalizing of dress. Reform will probably come, not by the general adoption of some costume in flat contrast to fashionable apparel, but by adding to the number of occasions on which rational costumes already devised may be worn.

SUMMARY

Fashion springs from the desire to individualize one's self from one's fellows.

It consists of a succession of planes in respect to some feature or features of consumption.

It embraces two distinct processes — imitation and differentiation.

Fashion does not appear in a caste society and may be restrained by sumptuary regulations.

Democracy, when it is materialistic in spirit, stimulates competition along the line of fashion.

Conformity to the fashionable style is more prompt and general than formerly, and the changes of fashion are more frequent.

The growth of intelligence causes the desire for self-individualization to seek satisfaction in other ways than fashion.

EXERCISES

1. Trace in detail the route by which a Parisian style reaches your neighbors.

2. Why do all fashions tend to the extreme?

3. Who are more responsible for fashion absurdities — the women who wear them or the men who are pleased by them?

4. Why is it that among the animals it is the male that exhibits the iridescent plumage, comb, wattles, antlers, ruff, crest, or peacock tail, while among us it is the female that displays the gorgeous feathers?

5. Show that the fashions, far from refining taste, actually debase it.

6. Why is rivalry in consumption less pronounced among farmers than among people of corresponding means in the city?

7. Is a religious leader to be commended for requiring his followers to renounce the extravagances of fashion and to dress simply?

8. Show that the imitating of superiors instead of ancestors in point of costume tends to the equalizing of social classes.

CHAPTER VII

THE NATURE OF CONVENTIONALITY

By "conventionality" is meant *a psychic plane resulting from the deliberate, non-competitive, non-rational imitation of contemporaries.* The qualifying terms "deliberate," "non-competitive," "non-rational," "of contemporaries," differentiate it respectively from the psychic planes laid by mob mind, fashion, rational imitation, and custom.

Conventionality reaches to the very framework of our lives

Conventionality imitation is far more radical, essential, and controlling in our lives than mob mind or fashion. It is not a passing flare-up like mob mind. It does not play over the mere surface of life like fashion. Often it supplies the governing beliefs, world-views, and ideals which determine our attitude toward the world and toward our fellow-man. We flatter ourselves that these are a faithful expression of our truest individuality, an outgrowth from our inmost selves; but this is nearly always an illusion. Says James:[1] "As a matter of fact we find ourselves believing, we hardly know how or why. Mr. Balfour gives the name of 'authority' to all those influences, born of the intellectual climate, that make hypotheses possible or impossible for us, alive or dead. Here in this room, we all of us believe in molecules and the conservation of energy, in democracy and necessary progress, in Protestant Christianity and the beauty of fighting for 'the doc-

[1] "The Will to Believe," 9.

trine of the immortal Monroe,' all for no reasons worthy of the name. We see into these matters with no more inner clearness, and probably with much less, than any disbeliever in them might possess. His unconventionality would probably have some grounds to show for its conclusions; but for us, not insight, but the *prestige* of the opinions, is what makes the spark shoot from them and light up our sleeping magazines of faith. Our reason is quite satisfied, in nine hundred and ninety-nine cases out of every thousand of us, if it can find a few arguments that will do to recite in case our credulity is criticised by some one else. Our faith is some one else's faith, and in the greatest matters this is most the case."

Imitation furnishes many of the postulates of our thinking

It is not easy for us to realize how nearly to the very core of our lives conventionality sends its influence. To drive home the truth, let us dissect a number of deep-seated beliefs that, despite their air of validity, can be shown to be of illegitimate origin, and — for most people — of purely conventional acceptance.

That Manual Labor is Degrading. — This, though rarely avowed, is widely acted upon. Says Miss Addams:[1] "To get away from menial work, to do obviously little with one's hands, is still the desirable status. This may readily be seen all along the line. A working-man's family will make every effort and sacrifice that the brightest daughter be sent to the high school and through the normal school, quite as much because a teacher in the family raises the general social standing and sense of family consequence, as that the returns are superior to factory or even office work. 'Teacher' in the vocabulary of many children is a synonym for women-folk gentry,

[1] "Democracy and Social Ethics," 195–196.

and the name is indiscriminately applied to women of a certain dress and manner. The same desire for social advancement is expressed by the purchasing of a piano, or the fact that the son is an office boy, and not a factory hand. The overcrowding of the professions by poorly equipped men arises from much the same source, and from the conviction that 'an education' is wasted if a boy goes into a factory or shop." In the Philippines manual labor is so despised that the *ilustrados*, *i.e.*, the learned, "will engage in industrial occupations that do not soil the hands, but they are careful not to prejudice their social position by any lapse, no matter how trivial or transient, toward the supposed lower vocation of the manual worker."

Laborers accept the upper-class stigma on manual labor

Now, it is natural that the shamefulness of manual labor should become an article of faith among the small minority who are exempt from it. Not only is the notion congenial to them, but the more people they can persuade to adopt it, the more they are looked up to and envied. It is strange, however, that the great working masses uncritically accept a notion that sets them at odds with the basis of their livelihood and depresses their social status. Acquiescence in it is like the man's sawing off the limb he is sitting on. Why, then, do they fall in with the idea? Simply because it comes to them with the prestige of upper-class approval.

That Pecuniary Success is the Only Success. — Miss Addams[1] observes that "a certain kindly contempt for her abilities which often puzzles the charity visitor may be explained by the standard of worldly success which the visited families hold. Success does not ordinarily go, in the minds of the poor, with charity and kind-

[1] "Democracy and Social Ethics," 24–25.

heartedness, but rather with the opposite qualities. The rich landlord is he who collects with sternness, who accepts no excuse, and will have his own. There are moments of irritation and of real bitterness against him, but there is still admiration, because he is rich and successful. The good-natured landlord, he who pities and spares his poverty-pressed tenants, is seldom rich. He often lives in the back of his house, which he has owned for a long time, perhaps has inherited; but he has been able to accumulate little. He commands the genuine love and devotion of many a poor soul, but he is treated with a certain lack of respect. In one sense he is a failure. The charity visitor, just because she is a person who concerns herself with the poor, receives a certain amount of this good-natured and kindly contempt, sometimes real affection, but little genuine respect."

Laborers accept and apply the commercial standard of human worth

Manifestly, these poor people do not reach this money standard of success through their own experience. Isolated from other social classes, the workers would probably appraise one another by a composite standard, the chief elements of which would be *efficiency* and *character*. The cash yardstick they so naïvely apply has been borrowed from the commercial class which they look up to as their superiors. It is quite natural for business men to measure one another's pith by the amount of money "made," because the volume of profit reaped, under the rules of the game, is a fairly adequate measure of business efficiency, the only practical measure, in fact. But outside the world of business their cash standard is a gross misfit. Artists, thinkers, writers, scholars, engineers, army and navy officers, and the members of the learned professions steadfastly refuse to rate one another by it and resent its appli-

cation to themselves. Industrial workers, too, have their own means of testing one another's prowess, and they would never have taken up the business man's criterion but for the great prestige the commercial class has in their eyes.

Laborers betray their own interests through thinking *à la bourgeoisie*

That Civic Worth is measured by Pecuniary Success. — Again we draw upon Miss Addams' limnings of the plain people of Chicago. "During one of the campaigns a clever cartoonist drew a poster representing the successful alderman in portraiture drinking champagne at a table loaded with pretentious dishes and surrounded by other revelers. In contradistinction was his opponent, a bricklayer, who sat upon a half-finished wall, eating a meagre dinner from a working-man's dinner-pail, and the passerby was asked which type of representative he preferred, the presumption being that at least in a working-man's district the bricklayer would come out ahead. To the chagrin of the reformers, however, it was gradually discovered that, in the popular mind, a man who laid bricks and wore overalls was not nearly so desirable for an alderman as the man who drank champagne and wore a diamond in his shirt-front. The district wished its representative 'to stand up with the best of them,' and certainly some of the constituents would have been ashamed to have been represented by a bricklayer." [1] In this case the industrial masses apply an alien worth-standard which clashes not only with their experience and common sense, but with their interests as well. To the comrade who can fitly represent and champion them they prefer the *mis*-representative who measures up to the standard of the business man. They borrow a standard which makes all workers zeros when they might just as well have a

[1] "Democracy and Social Ethics," 257–258.

touchstone (say efficiency) which would make some of them integers. Here we come on one secret of Labor's *via dolorosa*. In the struggle of interests in society no class can get its dues so long as it is infatuated with the standards, aims, and leaders of a rival class. The lot of labor can hardly be improved until working-men renounce "bourgeois" thinking and "bourgeois" valuations. It remains to be seen whether their true policy is to work out valuations all their own — as the "class conscious" laborites declare — or to press on to universally valid standards of human achievement and worth.

We adopt leisure-class opinion touching conservatism

That Conservatism is Good Form, whereas Radicalism is Vulgar. — Veblen[1] points out that conservatism "has acquired a certain honorific or decorative value. It has become prescriptive to such an extent that an adherence to conservative views is comprised as a matter of course in our notions of respectability." "Conservatism, being an upper-class characteristic, is decorous; and conversely, innovation, being a lower-class phenomenon, is vulgar. The first and most unreflected element in that instinctive revulsion and reprobation with which we turn from all social innovators is this sense of the essential vulgarity of the thing. So that even in cases where one recognizes the substantial merits of the case for which the innovator is spokesman, still one cannot but be sensible of the fact that the innovator is a person with whom it is at least distasteful to be associated, and from whose social contact one must shrink. Innovation is bad form." With most of us a blind attachment to the past savors of the gentle, the scholarly, the superior; whereas a critical attitude toward the traditional coupled with an enthusiasm

[1] "The Theory of the Leisure Class," 199.

for what might be is felt to be crude and low-class. This perverse conservatism is inexplicable save as a downward percolation from the leisure class which, by reason of its exemption from those economic stresses which urge to change and its dependence on vested interests and privileges for its exalted position, is instinctively hostile to innovation.

Certain standards of beauty originate in leisure-class snobbery

That Things are Beautiful in Proportion as they are Costly. — Says Veblen:[1] "While men may have set out with disapproving an inexpensive manner of living because it indicated inability to spend much, and so indicated a lack of pecuniary success, they end by falling into the habit of disapproving cheap things as being intrinsically dishonorable or unworthy because they are cheap." "So thoroughly has this habit of approving the expensive and disapproving the inexpensive been ingrained into our thinking that we instinctively insist upon at least some measure of wasteful expensiveness in all our consumption, even in the case of goods which are consumed in strict privacy and without the slightest thought of display." "We find things beautiful, as well as serviceable, somewhat in proportion as they are costly. With few and inconsequential exceptions, we all find a costly hand-wrought article of apparel much preferable, in point of beauty and of serviceability, to a less expensive imitation of it, however cleverly the spurious article may imitate the costly original; and what offends our sensibilities in the spurious article is not that it falls short in form or color, or, indeed, in visual effect in any way. The offensive object may be so close an imitation as to defy any but the closest scrutiny; and yet so soon as the counterfeit is detected, its æsthetic

[1] "The Theory of the Leisure Class," 155.

value, and its commercial value as well, declines precipitately."[1]

Women find unwomanly that which their lords disapprove

That the Consumption of Stimulants or Narcotics by Women is Unwomanly. — Veblen[2] argues that "the greater abstinence of women is in some part due to an imperative conventionality, and that this conventionality is, in a general way, strongest where the patriarchal tradition — the tradition that the woman is a chattel — has retained its hold in greatest vigor." "This tradition says that the woman, being a chattel, should consume only what is necessary to her sustenance, — except so far as her further consumption contributes to the comfort or the good repute of her master. The consumption of luxuries, in the true sense, is a consumption directed to the comfort of the consumer himself, and is, therefore, a mark of the master. Any such consumption by others can take place only on the basis of sufferance. In communities where the popular habits of thought have been profoundly shaped by the patriarchal tradition, we may accordingly look for survivals of the *tabu* on luxuries, at least to the extent of a conventional deprecation of their use by the unfree and dependent class. This is more particularly true as regards certain luxuries, the use of which by the dependent class would detract sensibly from the comfort or pleasure of their masters, or which are held to be of doubtful legitimacy on other grounds. In the apprehension of the great conservative middle class of Western civilization the use of these various stimulants is obnoxious to at least one, if not both, of these objections; and it is a fact too significant to be passed over that it is precisely among these middle classes of the Germanic culture, with their strong surviving

[1] *Ibid.*, 169. [2] *Ibid.*, 71.

sense of the patriarchal proprieties, that the women are to the greatest extent subject to a qualified *tabu* on narcotics and alcoholic beverages."

No contrast between the male and female nervous systems that should cause the one to benefit by stimulants and sedatives and not the other has ever been brought to light. Among the American pioneers the women smoked as freely as the men. The same is to be observed among people, like the negroes of the South, too spontaneous and easy-going to accept the burden of conventionality. On the other hand, in circles relatively emancipated from patriarchal ideas the like practice occurs. It is amusing to witness the horror of a convivial Southerner at the use of the mint julep and the cigar among women of the "swagger set." The subtleties of the conventional view are edifying. A lady of the old school, known to the writer, feels that "it doesn't look right," is in fact "shocking," for a lady unattended to enter a restaurant, seat herself at a table, and order a cocktail. The lady who drinks the cocktail a gentleman has ordered for her is blameless, as is also the unaccompanied lady who orders a "soft" drink; but to *order* a cocktail is "unladylike"!

"The spirit of the age" is a plane established by imitation

"The spirit of the age" reigns because of unconscious imitation. It took men a long time to discover the atmosphere, because everything is seen through that medium. Likewise, it has taken long to realize that "the spirit of the age" is a conventionality, because it is a spiritual atmosphere in which all minds are bathed and through which everything is viewed. Well says Chesterton:[1] "We see nothing 'dogmatic' in the inspiring, but certainly most startling, theory of physical science, that we should

[1] "Heretics," 302–303.

collect facts for the sake of facts, even though they seem as useless as sticks and straws. This is a great and suggestive idea, and its utility may, if you will, be proving itself, but its utility is, in the abstract, quite as disputable as the utility of that calling on oracles or consulting shrines which is also said to prove itself. Thus, because we are not in a civilization which believes strongly in oracles or sacred places, we see the full frenzy of those who killed themselves to find the sepulchre of Christ. But being in a civilization which does believe in this dogma of fact for fact's sake, we do not see the full frenzy of those who kill themselves to find the North Pole. I am not speaking of a tenable ultimate utility which is true both of the Crusades and the polar explorations. I mean merely that we do see the superficial and æsthetic singularity, the startling quality, about the idea of men crossing a continent with armies to conquer the place where a man died. But we do not see the æsthetic singularity and startling quality of men dying in agonies to find a place where no man can live — a place only interesting because it is supposed to be the meeting place of some lines that do not exist."

To be sure, the intellectual *élite* — perhaps one per cent of one per cent — will have what seem to them good and sufficient grounds for their manner of thinking. But when their way of thinking comes to be "the spirit of the age," these grounds are quite left out of sight, and all but the one in ten thousand will give you flimsy excuses rather than solid reasons for believing as he does. "The thing is in the air" — that is enough to make the vogue of anything that is congenial to the current way of thinking of people.

SUMMARY

Much of our thinking proceeds from assumptions which have been accepted uncritically because they are "in the air."

The judgments of the leisure class are adopted by the classes below them as superior and authoritative.

In many matters the leisure class is competent to lead; but in respect to social progress, human worth, efficiency, labor, etc., its judgments are so warped by its peculiar situation that they are valueless.

The acceptance of leisure-class views on such matters sets the active classes at odds with their work and their interests.

Working-men defer unduly to business men, and borrow from them standards which mislead them as to their true line of effort.

Women, instead of finding for themselves the right adjustment to life, follow male opinion as to what is proper and womanly.

EXERCISES

1. Why are we blind to the extent of our indebtedness to our own society and our own time, and therefore apt to imagine our individuality much more pronounced than it actually is?

2. Why is it that such generally admired beauties of person or costume as the bandaged foot, the high heel, the wasp waist, the full skirt, and the long train are such as incapacitate from all useful work? [See Veblen, 170–172.]

3. What is the root of the conventionality that the fast horse is more beautiful than the draught horse?

4. What is the genesis of the notion that a divinity or saint is honored by a periodical abstention from productive labor on the part of the votary? [See Veblen, 309–310.]

5. In what respects do the standards of morality and propriety current among women reflect the male attitude? [See Thomas, "Sex and Society," 168–172.]

CHAPTER VIII

THE LAWS OF CONVENTIONALITY IMITATION

THE primary generalization it is safe to make regarding conventionality imitation is: —

Mental states differ in ease of propagation.

Bodily movements spread readily

Motor impulses appear to diffuse themselves with great facility. Instance the Flagellants who, in 1260, appeared in Italy and thence spread over Europe. Processions of penitents stripped to the waist and scourging themselves with leather thongs appeared in the streets of cities. Their example worked so contagiously upon the minds of curious spectators that great numbers joined the brotherhood of the Flagellants and swelled the processions. Women and children, always the most suggestible elements, formed groups of their own for public self-flagellation. In Spires two hundred boys under twelve united for this purpose. When at last the Pope prohibited such exhibitions and ordered penitents to scourge themselves only in private, the practice, no longer supported by the reciprocal suggestion of example, died away in less than six months.

The Flagellants

The dancing mania

About the year 1370 the dancing mania spread through European cities, and here again the example of the dancers worked suggestively until the bystanders, no longer able to resist the infection, threw aside their garments and joined the wild revel.

The Jumpers

About 1740 in Welsh revivals religious frenzy in some persons happened to assume the form of jumping. Their

example infected onlookers, and finally jumping became in that district the characteristic expression of religious ecstasy.[1] Similarly the hysterical laughter of penitents in the great Kentucky revival of 1799–1800 gave to religious emotion a specific vent that worked contagiously until the "Holy Laugh" became "a recognized part of worship." The Shakers, "Holy Rollers," and "Holy Jumpers" of our own day illustrate religious emotion under the contagion of example following a particular narrow channel.

Epidemics of convulsions

In 1670 certain convulsive seizures appeared in the orphanage at Hoorn in Holland and started among the orphans a veritable epidemic. The children were usually seized when they saw others lying in the paroxysm or when from the screaming they learned that another had been attacked. On such an occasion even those who took to flight would be seized unless they happened to be very near the door of exit. Often so many children succumbed through seeing and hearing others that not enough remained on their feet to take care of the afflicted. When, after vain resort to public prayer, some one had the good sense to isolate the poor children, by placing them temporarily in private homes, the seizures became rarer and finally ceased. Says Fry:[2] "In a French convent a nun began to mew like a cat; other nuns began to mew likewise. The infection spread till all the nuns in the very

[1] Wesley describes the exercise as follows: "After the preaching was over any one who pleased gave out a verse of a hymn, and this they sung over and over again, with all their might and main, thirty or forty times, till some of them worked themselves into a sort of drunkenness or madness; they were then violently agitated, and leaped up and down in all manner of postures for hours together." — SOUTHEY, "Life of Wesley," II, 390.

[2] "Imitation as a Factor in Human Progress," *Contemporary Review*, 55, p. 661.

large convent began to mew every day at a certain hour, and continued mewing for several hours together, till their folly was checked by the threat of castigation from a company of soldiers placed for the purpose at the entrance of the nunnery. . . . In a German convent a nun began to bite her companions, who all took to the same habit, which is said to have spread through the greater part of Germany, and even to have extended to the nunneries of Holland and Rome. Something like this, though in a very much smaller degree, is said often to happen to girls' schools in England: one girl faints in church, and several follow suit; the whole attention of the girls is drawn to their interesting comrade, and the service of the church or the periods of the sermon afford no adequate counter-irritant for the interest, and off they go. In 1787 a girl at a cotton factory in Lancashire went into convulsions at a mouse put into her bosom by another girl, and the convulsions spread amongst the girls till the factory had to be shut up."

National gestures

Marching rhythm is infectious, as we see from the swinging pace of the small boys following a company of soldiers. Indeed, in such a case, unless one puts his mind to it, one cannot but keep step. Yawning is epidemic, as many learn to their mortification. Gestures spread so easily that particular gestures become national. There is the French shrug, the gesticulation of the Italians, the lifting and spreading of the hands, palms upward, so characteristic of the Jews. Thanks to imitation, whittling was once the sure mark of the preoccupied Yankee. Surrounded by smokers, a man who has been obliged to leave off or limit his smoking is impelled to hold an unlighted cigar between his lips, the "dry smoke."

At a given time very young people find irresistible a certain manner of walk or a certain signal, *e.g.*, waggling the hand over the shoulder.

Manner of speech

We are most imitative in things that are not the object of conscious attention. We are unconscious of our manner of speech because we are usually intent on the ideas we are trying to convey. This is why stuttering, stammering, and lisping are so infectious. A determination not to stammer is no sure protection against catching the trick if we associate much with a stammerer. A friend confesses that after a little association with one who lisps, lisping seems to him charming and he cannot avoid it. The writer found a few weeks in the South brought him to the "Southern drawl."

Says Fry:[1] "An Englishman goes to reside in America or in Ireland, and after a few years, or even months, acquires the peculiarities of expression, the delicate differences of utterance, which separate the speech of his place of residence from that of his place of birth. In this case there is no question of volition; he probably desires to retain his national pronunciation; there is no consciousness, for he is generally surprised, if not annoyed, at being told by his English friends that he has acquired a new dialect or brogue. But he has given some attention to the pronunciation around him, and by a purely reflex action he comes to pronounce as he hears." Language has some roots in the imitation of natural sounds. Says Fry:[2] "Our first articulate forefathers listened to the noises of the wind in their pine woods, . . . or heard

Onomatopœia

[1] "Imitation as a Factor in Human Progress," *Contemporary Review*, 55, p. 663.

[2] *Ibid.*, 668.

the rapid flight of wild birds disturbed in their haunts; and by imitation they produce words like the *sough*, and the *sigh*, and the *whir*, and the *whiz*, of our own speech. They stood by the . . . moorland stream, and *splash*, and *dash*, and *gurgle* may recall the noises they heard." Such, no doubt, is the origin of words like *slap*, *rap*, or *crack;* of *thud* or *dab* or *whack;* of *purr*, *buzz*, *hum*, *boom*, and *quack;* of *cough* or *hiccough* or *giggle* or *chuckle.* Primitive man in his festivities imitated the animals. The Kamtschadales acknowledge the bears as their dancing masters; for the bear dance with them is an exact counterpart of every attitude and gesture peculiar to this animal, through its various functions. The emu dance and the kangaroo dance of the Australian are likewise derived by imitation of animals.

The spread of dishes and drinks

The appetites differ in infectiousness. Were it not that the taking of stimulants is everywhere more of a social act than the taking of food, one might conclude that thirst spreads more rapidly than hunger. Certainly alcoholism makes more rapid headway among people of simple habits who have migrated to the city than gourmandism. Particular dishes spread, but they rarely reach more than a provincial or sectional vogue. One thinks of the "corn pone" of the South, the baked beans and mince pie of New England, the "haggis" of Scotland, the *risotto* of Lombardy, the *fagioli* at Florence, the *minestra* and *vermicelli* at Rome, the *macaroni* at Naples, the sausages that take their name from Bologna. On the other hand, drinks often become national. There is beer in Germany, ale in England, absinthe in boulevard France, the whiskey of Ireland, the brandy-and-soda that marks the travelling Englishman wherever he goes.

It is certain that American cocktails and mint juleps will find favor with the Filipinos long before American batter cakes, though one could not be sure what would happen if thirst quenching were not a ceremony of sociability.

The sex appetite is tinder to the suggestive spark

In any case the sex appetite is more vibrant and suggestible than either of the others. Truly appalling is the swiftness with which sensuality and lewdness may infect a people. In a mushroom mining camp debauchery is swifter than drink in breaking down steady habits. This is why no society can afford to let its members say or publish or exhibit what they please. Lust is a monster that can be lulled to sleep only with infinite difficulty, whereas a pin prick, a single staccato note is enough to arouse. The ordered sex relation is, perhaps, man's greatest achievement in self-domestication. Common sense forbids that the greed of purveyors of "suggestive" plays, pictures, or literature be suffered to disturb it. Moreover, if, as experience seems to show, the social evil cannot be utterly stamped out in cities, it is better to sweep it aside into some "tenderloin" or "levee" than to let it flaunt in the frequented streets. The public owes little thanks to the mistaken zealots who assault segregated vice so energetically as to drive it forth into the tenements where its virus finds sound material to work on.

Feelings are easily induced by suggestion because independent of bodily state

The feelings are more contagious than the appetites, probably because they depend less upon the condition of the body at the moment. The rapid spread of hope and terror is seen in "booms" and panics; and the greater acuteness of the latter seems to show that terror is the more catching. Laziness is catching, but so is ambition. How often we see a single officer put life and

zeal into a demoralized command, a new energetic head communicate a thrill and a stir to a run-down administrative department! In warfare the great infectiousness of courage gives immense value to the brave and resolute man. The most striking instances of this occur when Oriental troops are led by European officers. Even with ignorant Tommy Atkins the example of his officer is everything, and hence a British officer must die rather than retreat unbidden. On the other hand, among the far better educated soldiers of America and Germany, the example of the officers is less important than the individual quality of the troops.

The man of action must be a moral dynamo

What lends hero value to the "man of action" is not his practical wisdom so much as his ability to kindle in others steadfastness and courage. This power of radiating emotion is not at all the same thing as the thinker's power of communicating his thought. It is, however, akin to the power of the prophet or apostle to inspire in his hearers energy of conviction, *i.e.*, to win disciples. If we inquire why Cortez, Ney, Skobeloff, Stonewall Jackson, Stanley, and Nansen were accounted so precious, we find it was not that they made always the right decisions, but that at the darkest hour they could always infuse hope and courage into their followers. Says Le Bon of De Lesseps: "He succeeded in his enterprise owing to his immense strength of will, but also owing to the fascination he exercised on those surrounding him. To overcome the universal opposition he met with, he had only to show himself. He would speak briefly, and in the face of the charm he exerted his opponents became his friends. The English in particular strenuously opposed his scheme; he had only to put in an appearance in England to rally

all suffrages. In later years, when he passed Southampton the bells were rung on his passage."

The itch of curiosity is communicable

Curiosity is extremely infectious. The story is told of two men strolling along a bustling street and discussing the art of drawing a crowd. One offered to bet that then and there he could in five minutes, without making a motion or a sound, assemble a hundred people. His offer being taken, he stepped to the curb and, shading his eyes with his hand, gazed intently at the masons working on a tall building just opposite. In three minutes the curb was lined with a hundred persons straining their eyes to see what the man was so interested in. The contagion of curiosity among vacuous urban masses is brought out by a writer in the *Independent*.[1] "The average Londoner is a pitiful type of mankind. He is densely ignorant and knows little else than to say 'God save the King' on every occasion that offers any excuse or no excuse at all. If a man's hat blows off in the street, a crowd of hundreds of people will collect and hoot and laugh at the unfortunate person until something equally as trivial attracts their attention elsewhere. If a person drops any article in a public place, they will rush toward the direction of the sound, and if the article has broken, they will stand and look on with keen enjoyment as the pieces are being picked up. . . . They have some of the same characteristics and resemble in certain respects the poorer class of negroes in the United States. All that is necessary to collect a multitude is to beat a bass drum. Hundreds of people will speedily assemble and follow as long as the drum is beating, dispersing reluctantly only when it has ceased to sound."

[1] Vol. 54, p. 2930.

Curiosity the first cause of many social currents

The rôle of curiosity in forming crowds is emphasized by Tarde [1] who plainly has his Parisians in mind. "All those throngs of people which end in bringing on revolutions in religion, government, art, and industry begin to collect under the sway of this sentiment.[2] When a person is seen to be curious about what once may have appeared to be the merest trifle, we immediately desire to know about it. This movement spreads very quickly, and, through the effect of mutual reaction, the intensity of everybody's desire increases in proportion to its spread. Whenever any novelty whatsoever, a sermon, a political platform, a philosophic idea, a commercial article, a poem, a novel, a drama, or an opera, appears in some notable place, *i.e.*, in a capital city, it is only necessary for the attention of ten persons to become ostensibly fixed upon this thing in order that one hundred, one thousand, or ten thousand persons may quickly take an interest in it and enthuse about it. At times, this phenomenon takes on the character of hysteria. In the fifteenth century when Böhm, the German piper, began to preach his evangel of fraternal equality and community of goods, an epidemical exodus set in. 'The journeymen hastened from their workshops, the farm maids ran with their sickles in their hands,' reports a chronicler, and in a few hours more than thirty thousand people had assembled in a waste place without food. Once general curiosity has been excited, the mob is irresistibly predisposed to be carried away by all the different kinds of ideas and desires which the preacher, the orator, the dramatist, and the novelist of the hour may seek to popularize."

[1] "Laws of Imitations," 196–197.

[2] This statement is far too sweeping.

Emotions are more nimble than ideas

Emotions spread more rapidly than ideas and opinions. We have means of sifting the latter, of parting chaff from wheat. Finding a proposition absurd or self-contradictory or contrary to fact helps us to reject it, no matter how insistent mass suggestion may be. But there are no such logical tests we can apply to sympathies, antipathies, moral sentiments, or religious emotions. This is why feelings run faster and farther than philosophical, scientific, political, or juristic ideas. Rarely does a nation have a creed or a philosophy, but often the whole nation shares the same love, hatred, ambition, or fanaticism. It is hard to get a national unity of opinion on "Who wrote the Letters of Junius?" "Was Dreyfus guilty?" "Is the negro fit to vote?" Yet Germany experiences alternately anti-English and pro-English feelings, Italy anti-French and pro-French feelings. Since sentiment is more electric than opinion, we can coin the maxim, *To unify men touch the chord of feeling.* This is why at the close of bitter debates over points of doctrine the members of a church convention, in order to recover solidarity, join hands and sing—

> "Blest be the tie that binds
> Our hearts in Christian love."

Unity comes more readily through feelings than through beliefs

In 1893 at the Congress of Religions in Chicago the delegates of all colors and all lands could be welded by religious and ethical feelings, but not through intellectual assent to any theological doctrine whatsoever. The reason why sentiment, not argument, should be the staple of the after-dinner speaker is that usually a banquet is at bottom an endeavor for harmony. The more heterogeneous his audience, the more the orator must rely on feelings

rather than arguments to win them over. The man accustomed to address members of his special group — bankers, coal-miners, cotton growers — tries to bring them into line by reasoning; but the propagandist who labors with masses having few beliefs in common develops a fiery, emotional style of oratory because he can unite his hearers only by means of feeling. If the labor agitator of to-day utters more claptrap than the leaders of the earlier agitation, it is not because he is less sensible, but because, thanks to immigration, the element he is trying to unite is far less homogeneous now than it was sixty years ago.

An ideal is a better religious nucleus than a dogma

Admiration for a type of character is more communicable than a theological dogma, and hence the successful apostle preaches "Christ and Him crucified." The burden of the revivalist's preaching is not "Believe and thou shalt be saved," but "Come to Jesus." Creed is losing its power to unite people into churches, but the growth of young people's societies formed on the basis of a common love of and loyalty to Jesus fills the world with amazement. We may think out our opinions, but our personal ideals are mostly borrowed, often long before the intellect has become active.[1]

[1] The overwhelming majority of people, bad as well as good, respond to some ideal or other. Chesterton is not far wrong when he says: "Every man is idealistic; only it so often happens that he has the wrong ideal. Every man is incurably sentimental; but, unfortunately, it is so often a false sentiment. When we talk, for instance, of some unscrupulous commercial figure, and say that he would do anything for money, . . . we slander him very much. He would not do anything for money. He would do some things for money; he would sell his soul for money, for instance; and, as Mirabeau humorously said, he would be quite wise 'to take money for muck.' He would oppress humanity for money; but then it happens that humanity and the soul are not

Imaginary characters radiate moral contagion

Says Fry:[1] "The anxiety of Don Quixote, under all the strange circumstances of his strange career, to act in exact imitation of the heroes of his heart, under the most similar circumstances in their careers, is one of the strokes of nature in the immortal work of Cervantes. . . . How often the youthful culprit has been led to the commission of crime by the reading of some novel or story, in which Dick Turpin, . . . has been depicted in a way which has fired his imagination, and produced a strong desire to emulate his deeds of violence or of robbery. Surely the moral responsibility of the novelist is not a light one."

"Nothing perhaps more impresses the mind with the solidarity of the human race than the thought of the enduring influence, through all succeeding generations, of the great men of old, of the love that is wakened anew in each wave of human life for the mighty creations of the mighty masters of song and of romance, and of the force of imitation which goes with and is intensified by this love. Imitation, said Sir John Eliot, is 'the moral mistress of our lives.'"

The responsibility of the Artist exceeds that of the Thinker

The masters of literature by inventing and portraying to the world imaginary characters produce through imitation very noticeable currents in moral history. Julie, Werther, Manfred, Rochester, Jane Eyre, Tom Brown, etc., have been the pattern of tens of thousands. Since

things that he believes in; they are not his ideals. But he has his own dim and delicate ideals; and he would not violate these for money. He would not drink out of the soup tureen, for money. He would not wear his coat tails in front, for money. He would not spread a report that he had softening of the brain, for money." — "Heretics," 250–251.

[1] "Imitation as a Factor in Human Progress," *Contemporary Review*, 55, p. 674.

this is so the disseminator of wrong ideals is altogether more dangerous to society than the disseminator of wrong opinions. Investigators and thinkers, working in the sphere of opinion, may safely be left free to speak and print, because their errors will spread slowly and will likely be overtaken by the truth before they get very far. Moreover, opinion does not shape conduct so much as is generally supposed. But artists, working in the sphere of personal ideals, may not be left entirely uncensored, seeing that any poison they emit circulates so rapidly.

The men honored are the men who will be imitated

The men society allows to succeed and to be honored are taken as models by the rising generation. Few of the young compare personal ideals and then choose the one which squares with some philosophy of life. Most of them mould themselves upon the type that is for the moment prominent and admired. Here is where society receives its just punishment in case it allows bad men to float to the top in business, finance, or politics. Being imitated by the young, they spread their virus throughout the social body. Not the crook in the alley is the greater menace, but the crook in office, in the place of trust, the crook who rides at the head of the procession, hands out the diplomas to the high-school graduates, heads the state delegation or delivers the Fourth of July oration.

Personal ideals elude analysis and criticism

Probably a simple idea, *e.g.*, that Friday is unlucky, or a simple feeling, *e.g.*, dislike of the negro, diffuses itself less readily than a complex thing like a personal ideal. Each of us out of his own experience can in a measure test and rightly judge the simple ideas or feelings that saturate his community. But it is harder to criticise and withstand the ideal of life that dominates our community or our time. In such a complex, some of the elements are sure

to have real worth, and these prepossess us in favor of the ideal, however false it may be.

Sex charm follows the conventional female type

There is good ground for believing that even so elemental a thing as sex charm is the sport of conventional standards of beauty. Often the prevailing ideal of female form has been quite strange to the natural taste of men, a grotesque ideal which grows up among the leisure class and afterwards vitiates the taste of the people. Veblen observes:[1] —

"It is more or less a rule that in communities which are at the stage of economic development at which women are valued by the upper class for their service, the ideal of female beauty is a robust, large-limbed woman. The ground of appreciation is the physique, while the conformation of the face is of secondary weight only. A well-known instance of this ideal of the early predatory culture is that of the maidens of the Homeric poems.

The preferred female type is an incident of pecuniary emulation

"This ideal suffers a change in the succeeding development, when, in the conventional scheme, the office of the high-class wife comes to be a vicarious leisure simply. The ideal then includes the characteristics which are supposed to result from or to go with a life of leisure consistently enforced. The ideal accepted under these circumstances may be gathered from descriptions of beautiful women by poets and writers of the chivalric times. In the conventional scheme of those days ladies of high degree were conceived to be in perpetual tutelage, and to be scrupulously exempt from all useful work. The resulting chivalric or romantic ideal of beauty takes cognizance chiefly of the face, and dwells on its delicacy, and on the delicacy of the hands and feet, the slender figure, and especially the slender waist. In the pictorial representa-

[1] "The Theory of the Leisure Class," 146.

tions of the women of that time, and in modern romantic imitators of the chivalric thought and feeling, the waist is attenuated to a degree that implies extreme debility. The same ideal is still extant among a considerable portion of the population of modern industrial communities; but it is to be said that it has retained its hold most tenaciously in those modern communities which are least advanced in point of economic and civil development, and which show the most considerable survivals of status and of predatory institutions."

Because under the high efficiency of modern industry the wife's exemption from productive labor has become too general to serve as a mark of the highest pecuniary grade, "the ideal of feminine beauty is beginning to change back again from the infirmly delicate, translucent, and hazardously slender, to a woman of the archaic type that does not disown her hands and feet, nor, indeed, the other gross material facts of her person. In the course of economic development the ideal of beauty among the peoples of the Western culture has shifted from the woman of physical presence to the lady, and it is beginning to shift back again to the woman; and all in obedience to the changing conditions of pecuniary emulation."

How a conventional ideal of beauty becomes externalized in an isolated population

Another illustration of the docility with which sex attraction will flow in a conventional channel is the process of conjugal selection which some anthropologists have invoked in order to account for the genesis of a facial type in an isolated population. According to Ripley:[1] "It is easy to conceive of artificial selection in an isolated society whereby choice should be exercised in accordance with certain standards of beauty which had become

[1] "The Races of Europe," 202.

generally accepted in that locality. We have but to suppose a fashion (in faces) arising by chance, or perhaps suggested by some casual variation in a local hero or a prominent family. This fashion we may conceive to crystallize into customary observance, until finally through generations it becomes veritably bred in the bone and part of the flesh of an entire community. A primary requisite is isolation — material, social, political, linguistic, and at last ethnic." In this way is supposed to have originated the peculiar facial type common to the Basques, to the Jews, and to the Armenians. It is significant that the females of these *pseudo*-races are truer to the type than the males. Have the men by choosing mates in conformity to a certain standard of beauty at last externalized and fixed the preferred type of face?

The radiation of will

Volitions are extremely communicable, the accepting of another's volition being obedience. Men differ greatly in their power to command such acceptance. There are born masters who impose their will on others as there are born apostles who impose their convictions. "Mutiny Acts," says G. B. Shaw, "are needed only by officers who command without authority. Divine Right needs no whip."

Obedience draws other imitations in its wake

Obedience is the tap root of other subordinations and servilities. The slave or ex-slave apes his master in gait, port, dress, expletives, vices. Says Tarde:[1] "The common people have always been inclined to copy kings and courts and upper classes according to the measure in which they have submitted to their rule. During the years preceding the French Revolution, Paris no longer copied court fashions, and no longer applauded the plays

[1] "Laws of Imitations," 198.

in favor at Versailles, because the spirit of insubordination had already made rapid strides." Conversely, whoever is imitated is likely to acquire power. It is safe to say that the Roman master could not hold down in abject bondage the Greek slave from whom he was learning philosophy and literature and appreciation of the fine arts. Who is capable of being at once a disciple of Epictetus and his master? The Frankish barbarians held the whip hand over the Gallo-Romans, yet they drove with a slack rein. The secret was that they were spiritually mastered by these subjects of theirs, and could not at the same moment imitate them and oppress them.

The Tardean law

Tarde has formulated the following law of conventionality imitation.

Imitation proceeds from within outward, from internals to externals.[1]

Tarde thus illustrates his thesis: "In the sixteenth century fashions in dress came into France from Spain. This was because Spanish literature had already been imposed upon us [the French] at the time of Spain's preëminence. In the seventeenth century, when the preponderance of France was established, French literature ruled over Europe, and subsequently French arts and French fashions made the tour of the world. When Italy, overcome and downtrodden as she was, invaded us in the fifteenth century, with her arts and fashions, but, first of all, with her marvellous poetry, it was because the prestige of her higher civilization and of the Roman Empire that she had unearthed and transfigured had subjugated her conquerors."

Power brings influence

On the same principle, the ascendency of British capital and enterprise in Chili causes British ways to be imitated

[1] See "Laws of Imitations," 199–213.

and creates a demand for British goods. The party or nation that has the power is likely to get imitated in externals. This is one reason why "Trade follows the flag." The capture of lucrative markets hinges sometimes on the outcome of the struggle of rival nations for "influence." Recall the rivalry of the English and the French to impress the Egyptians, the struggle between England and Russia for prestige in the eyes of the Afghans. Alexander's conquests would not have been followed by rapid Hellenization of the East were it not that the acceptance of the Greek sway drew naturally in its wake the acceptance of Greek culture. The invasions of the Germanic tribes would have been much more disastrous to civilization had not their successes been preceded by several centuries of defeat by Roman arms and consequently of borrowing from Roman culture. By the time they became masters they had learned a deep respect for the *civilitas* that had so long held them at bay. The aforetime rage of the Japanese for European dress, language, schools, manners, and entertainment was a consequence of the impression of superiority made upon them by European warfare, science, industry, and administration. The ascendency of American arms and government in Porto Rico brought about a furore of Americanization. Says a writer in *The Outlook*:[1] —

Spontaneous Americanization of Porto Ricans since 1900

"Three years is a short time in which to work visible changes in the life of a people, but that changes have taken place during that time in the dress, manners, and customs of the Porto Rican people cannot be questioned." "Four years ago Porto Ricans had never heard of base-ball; it is now becoming the insular game." "A member of the

[1] Vol. 74, pp. 653–654, "Porto Rico, 1900–1903."

Executive Council told me that, in his opinion, base-ball was doing more to Americanize Porto Rico than express conciliation or legislative acts passed to that end.

"Altered styles of dress, chiefly among the better classes, are noticeable. I well remember, three years ago, sitting in the plazas, . . . on the Thursday and Sunday evenings when the band played. Up and down by twos . . . paced the girls and women of the city; all classes, poor and rich, democratically assembled together. Some were bare-headed, with flowers in their loosely done black hair; some wore mantillas; all of them had their faces powdered to a pasty whiteness. Whatever charm their personal appearance created was of a 'sweet disorder' in the dress; a candid person would have called them a dowdy lot. Now, in the same familiar places, less than three years later, American and Parisian dressmaking is writ large over the same weekly parades. One scarcely ever sees a mantilla on these occasions; some of the women wear hats precisely like contemporary head-gear in New York. The passing of the mantilla is a misfortune; the hats are much less appropriate and becoming. But with the mantilla the unsightly powdering custom has nearly disappeared. . . . The naturally good complexions of the Porto Rican women glow now with a healthier color beneath a neat and well-ordered coiffure. The women are visibly better groomed. The band plays Sousa's marches, 'Mr. Dooley,' or airs from 'The Country Girl,' instead of the mournful minor music of the Danzas. The people laugh and talk as they walk; they are out to see as well as to be seen; young men walk with the women.

"Dress has changed; manners and customs keep pace. At a ball given in honor of Admiral Higginson recently,

time-honored Spanish social conventions were abandoned, as they have been since on similar occasions. Dances were divided; young senoritas, after the Northern fashion, sat out dances or intermissions in the foyer or boxes of the adjoining theatre with their partners — a performance bringing social ostracism or engagements under the old standard. This is merely an instance — there are many others indicating what to us seems a more rational and wholesome association between men and women."

Nothing succeeds like success

In the struggles of interfused peoples that determine which shall assimilate the other, the victory is apt to go to the element that in some way demonstrates superiority. Recall the rôle of military success and political domination in deciding the rivalries of Americans and French in New Orleans, of Americans and Spanish in California, of English and French in Canada. There is a great unlikeness in the response of our aliens to their American environment. Immigrants from a big and powerful people, like the English or the Chinese, Americanize less rapidly than representatives of the smaller peoples, like the Norwegians or Danes. Those that have no share and no pride in the state they come from — Irish, Russian Jews, Ruthenians, Slovaks, Poles — offer the least resistance of all. On the whole, those who come now Americanize much more readily than did the non-English immigrants of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. Not only do they come from lesser peoples and from humbler social strata, but, thanks to the great rôle the United States plays in the world, the American culture meets them with far more prestige than it had then. Although we have ever greater masses to assimilate, let us comfort ourselves with the fact that the vortical suction of our civilization is stronger now than ever before.

When different religions are in contact, they are likely to borrow dogmas from one another before they borrow rites from one another. Similarly, a system of law will borrow legal principles from another system before it borrows legal procedure. This is why externals — rites, ceremonies, organization — are apt to be more archaic than are the dogmas, principles, or functions they serve. This is why so often the shell or husk remains intact although the substance, the content, has been entirely changed.[1]

Why externals are archaic

Think how legal fictions permit the spirit of the legal system to change without disturbing the form, how interpretation alters the spirit of the written constitution, how primitive religious rites and symbols remain, but are adapted to the age by progressive refinement in the mode

The form is durable, the spirit is adaptable

[1] On the other hand, when a religion is *forced* upon a people below its cultural level, the order of borrowing is just the reverse, and it is the inner features that will be archaic. Thus Goldziher states that — "In different parts of the Islamic world paganism, with uncultivated tribes, in its more or less original forms, has outlasted the ruling influence of Islam, although that was established centuries ago." "The Ingush are Muhammadans in name; but, as with most peoples inhabiting mountains, their ancient paganism has conserved itself under their exterior Islam." "The worship of the idol Gushmile is almost universal among them. The Muhammadan Galgai (in the Caucasus) pray only by night in front of quadrangular stone columns of the height of a man, erected on hills and in cemeteries. Remarkable is the worship of skeletons in an ossuary near Nasran. The skeletons are said to come from their ancestors and to have begun to decay only since the arrival of the Russians. These objects of worship are *covered with green shawls from Mekka*. This green shawl from Mekka, with which the objects and forms of the old traditional worship are covered, interprets very fittingly the ethno-psychological process involved in the Islamification of such populations. Green is the Prophet's color. Under the 'green shawl' the old national religious '*Âdât* continue to live.'" — Congress of Arts and Science, II, 511, 512.

of interpreting them. In England we see democracy coming in without, however, displacing the forms of monarchy, just as, in Rome, imperialism crept in under the venerable republican forms. Our pagan ancestors, when they launched a ship, bound a captive to the rollers to propitiate the god of the sea. The bottle of wine broken on the ship's prow to-day is our way of "reddening the keel" of the vessel to be launched and insuring her good luck. The old form is kept, but what a change in the spirit! In the distant past youths and maidens celebrated the coming of the season of love with licentious dancing about a symbolic pole. Little children now caper innocently about the May-pole, but the sense of the original meaning of the thing is utterly lost. Anthropologists bid us recognize in the Lord's Supper the ancient rite, common to many primitive religions, of "eating the god." The sacrament may have had such a genesis, but it is certain that the theory of the rite, the significance of the symbolic act, has changed many times since the days of totemism.

It is the exterior of social life that abounds in fossils

Since the replacement of the inner element, by borrowing or by development, goes on more rapidly than the replacement of the outer element, we come upon numerous "survivals," all of them in ways of *doing*, rather than in ways of *thinking* and *feeling*. Double-dyed conservative that he is, man has always felt himself *safe*, provided only the *aspect* of time-hallowed ancestral things was duly preserved. This is why ceremonial is "the museum of history." When the "ordeal of battle" was the ultimate method of ascertaining the Divine Will, it was fitting that just before the coronation of an English sovereign an armed champion should sound his trumpet and offer to fight with any one who disputed the right of the claimant to the

throne. Yet the armor-clad horseman continued to appear in coronations down into the nineteenth century, when men had completely forgotten that the duel was once an appeal to the judgment of Heaven. Feudalism is defunct, but its titles — Monsieur, Duke, Lord, Count, etc. — survive. Norse mythology is dead, but Yule-tide and Easter, rebaptized as Christian festivals, live on. The original occasion and significance of Thanksgiving Day has passed away; the festival is now little more than an excuse for family reunions, overrepletion, and intercollegiate football. No doubt it will experience many shiftings of significance in the future, but it will survive them all and die out only when the American people die out. Kingless though we are, the mace, that symbol of the Royal Presence, before which as before the King himself all unseemly brawling should cease, is still carried down the aisle of Congress when the members forget their dignity. That relic of pagan days, Hallowe'en, from the serious concern of men has become the glee time of prankish children, and in the "Eeny-meeny-miny-mo" of the playground lives on some incantation that once made spirits obey and men tremble.

Reverential imitation of superiors precedes competitive imitation

Other evidence of his principle is produced by Tarde when he says:[1] "Do we ever see one class which is in contact with, but which has never, hypothetically, been subject to the control of, another determine to copy its accent, its dress, its furniture, and its buildings, and end by embracing its principles and beliefs? This would invert the universal and necessary order of things. The strongest proof, indeed, that imitation spreads from within to without is to be found in the fact that in the relations

[1] "Laws of Imitations," 201.

between different classes, envy never precedes obedience and trust, but is always, on the contrary, the sign and the result of a previous state of obedience and trust. Blind and docile devotion to the Roman patricians, to the Athenian *eupatrides*, or to the French nobility of the old régime preceded the envy, *i.e.*, the desire to imitate them externally, which they came to inspire. Envy is the symptom of a social transformation which, in bringing classes together and in lessening the inequality of their resources, renders possible not only the transmission, as before, of their thoughts and aims, not only patriotic or religious communion and participation in the same worship, but the radiation of their luxury and well-being as well."

The arts cannot expand beyond the sphere of the ideas or ideals they express

It is a corollary of the principle we are considering that *the imitation of ideas precedes the imitation of the arts that express them.* Thus Romanticism in thought preceded Romanticism in literature; people had been prepared for Scott and Dumas and Jean Paul and Victor Hugo by the diffusion of the ideas of Jacobi and Burke and De Maistre. So the revival of Greek learning antedated the triumph of the art of Michael Angelo. Darwin and Moleschott made minds ready to appreciate the literary product of the Naturalists and Realists. It is not known that classic art was adopted by any people unacquainted with the Greek myths, or that Gothic architecture had a sphere of acceptance wider than that of the Christian mysticism it so fully expresses. Hardly would the painting of Millet or Israels win so many disciples among artists were it not that social democracy is in the air. Similarly the ideas under the phrase "bankruptcy of science" had to gain circulation before there could spring up that school of writers known as Symbolists.

The fundamental beliefs spread the farthest

This law explains why beliefs fuse sooner than languages, manners, or customs. The Delphic Oracle attained authority in all Greece long before the assimilation brought about by the Olympic Games. Europe had a common faith long before the great central monarchies began to assimilate the peoples. If language spread as rapidly as religion, there would be as many religions as languages, but the fact is that the struggle for existence and the elimination of inferiors or variants is so much greater among religions, in consequence of their invasive power, that there are fewer of them.

SUMMARY

Movements and actions readily infect the beholder.

Matters like gesture and accent which are not ordinarily the object of conscious attention, quickly conform to example.

The susceptibility of the sex appetite to suggestion justifies a certain social censorship over books, plays, pictures, etc.

Feelings are more readily communicated by suggestion than appetites or ideas.

Personal ideals circulate more quickly than beliefs. For this reason Art needs the censor more than Science or Philosophy.

Sex desire will follow the conventional type of the opposite sex.

Impression and fascination inspire a general readiness to imitate.

The outer form of institutions lasts, whereas the spirit and purpose change easily.

EXERCISES

1. Why does your throat ache after listening to a speaker who forms his voice badly?

2. Consider the pros and cons of talks on sex hygiene before the segregated pupils of the public schools.

3. Does the progress in stability and security lessen the hero value of the leader, and exalt his directive capacity?

4. Why is it that the masterful teacher who keeps the big boys in order is imitated by them?

5. What is the chief objection to setting up in a public place the statue of a Tweed or a Quay?

6. Show how a popular ideal like the Gibson Girl tends to get realized in flesh and blood.

7. Study closely some raw immigrant family and see if the process of their Americanization agrees with Tarde's law.

CHAPTER IX

THE RADIANT POINTS OF CONVENTIONALITY

PERHAPS the most general clew to the direction and spread of conventionality is given in the statement:— *The social superior is imitated by the social inferior.*[1]

Before illustrating this principle, the great key to conventional imitation, let us consider some of its limitations.

Basic instincts and needs may resist imitation of the superior

In the first place the influence of the social superior may be withstood in case it clashes with fundamental needs or instincts. For instance, in the upper class from time to time it has been held "bad form" for ladies to nurse their children; but this convention violates so deep-rooted an instinct that it has never come into general good repute and probably never will. In his code of lady service or of duelling the social superior has at times gone to such absurd lengths that the common sense of the inferior has revolted. In the England of the seventeenth century it was not the profligacy of the upper class, but the Puritanism of the middle class, that finally gave the key-note to English morals. We see the same thing in the refusal of wage-earners to accept the bourgeois aversion to early marriage. Miss Addams[2] points out that the charity visitor, as she comes to know the situation of the poor, "discovers how incorrigibly bourgeois her standards

Workingmen do not accept the bourgeois aversion to early marriage

[1] See Tarde, "Laws of Imitations," 213–221.

[2] "Democracy and Social Ethics," 38, 39.

have been, and it takes but a little time to reach the conclusion that she cannot insist so strenuously upon the conventions of her own class which fail to fit the bigger, more emotional, and freer lives of working people. The charity visitor holds well-grounded views upon the imprudence of early marriages, quite naturally, because she comes from a family and circle of professional and business people. A professional man is scarcely equipped and started in his profession before he is thirty. A business man, if he is on the road to success, is much nearer prosperity at thirty-five than twenty-five, and it is therefore wise for these men not to marry in the twenties; but this does not apply to the working-man. In many trades he is laid upon the shelf at thirty-five, and in nearly all trades he receives the largest wages in his life between twenty and thirty." "He naturally regards his children as his savings-bank; he expects them to care for him when he gets old, and in some trades old age comes very early."

Nor the bourgeois doctrine of the rights of children

The writer goes on to show why parental abdication, now so popular with the bourgeoisie, is not imitated by wage-earners. "Parents who work hard and anticipate an old age when they can no longer earn take care that their children shall expect to divide their wages with them from the very first. Such a parent, when successful, impresses the immature, nervous system of the child, thus tyrannically establishing habits of obedience, so that the nerves and will may not depart from this control when the child is older. The charity visitor, whose family relation is lifted quite out of this, does not in the least understand the industrial foundation for this family tyranny.

"The head of a kindergarten training class once addressed a club of working women, and spoke of the des-

potism which is often established over little children. She said that the so-called determination to break a child's will many times arose from a lust of dominion, and she urged the ideal relationship founded upon love and confidence. But many of the women were puzzled. One of them remarked as she came out of the club room, 'If you did not keep control over them from the time they are little, you would never get their wages when they are grown up.' Another one said: 'Ah, of course she [meaning the speaker] doesn't have to depend upon her children's wages. She can afford to be lax with them, because even if they don't give money to her, she can get along without it.'" [1]

By sheer merit a thing may mount in defiance of social gravity

Happily, social prestige is not everything, and the humblest person may launch a doctrine or ideal which, by reason of its strength or fitness, will ultimately find favor with the upper social layers. Chrysippus and Epictetus, though without social vantage-ground, radiated Stoic ideas to the very apex of Roman society. Think of the successful propagation of the Gospel by Jews and slaves and "base mechanicals" in a world ripe for monotheism and a purer ideal! Luther, George Fox, Howard, Pestalozzi, George Stevenson, Garrison, and Lincoln are men who in some way impressed society, without a dais to stand on.

The lower classes may copy their ancestors rather than their superiors

Then, in a strongly traditional society, the members of a lower caste will prefer to imitate their ancestors rather than ape the upper caste. This is the *Bauern-Stolz* so often met with in Germany and Austria. "Rarely, indeed, even among the most prosperous Bauers, so long as they are occupied in the cultivation of their land, is there any tendency to ape the manners or social customs

[1] "Democracy and Social Ethics," 44.

of even the poorest of the aristocracy or of the official or the professional classes." [1]

The superior insensibly borrows from the inferior

Again, just as bodies of different temperature interchange heat, so classes on different levels interchange characteristics, and to a certain extent the superior borrows from the inferior. Slang or *argot* invades literature; homely country phrases flavor city speech; darky songs and dances win the *entrée* to the drawing-room; Marie Antoinette in her Petit Trianon plays at peasant life; Millet introduces the peasant into high art; the nobility accepts the frock-coat and the simple manners of the middle class; masters become tainted with the sensuality and vices of their slaves; our Southerners soften their consonants and open their vowels in unwitting imitation of the negro. When one language drives out another, it nevertheless borrows some words from the displaced tongue. English vanquishes Spanish in the Southwest, but accepts such words as *calabash*, *cotton*, *palaver*, *guerilla*, *alligator*, *corridor*, *adobe*, *patio*, *arroyo*, *renegade*, *plaza*, etc. From the long-vanished Indian speech English took such words as *potato*, *squaw*, *wigwam*, *moccasin*, *pemmican*, *hurricane*, and *wampum*.

Culture men enveloped by an inferior race become conservative

Whites in contact with aborigines let down. Certain of the first trans-Alleghany settlers became so Indianized as to wear a buckskin dress, marry a squaw, and let the scalp-lock grow. Realizing this danger of let-down, an isolated white folk enveloped by savages becomes intensely conservative. The French Canadians of to-day are French of the seventeenth century, and their conservatism has, no doubt, the same root that Miss Schreiner [2] finds for Boer conservatism.

[1] Palmer, "Austro-Hungarian Life." [2] *Cosmopolitan*, 29, pp. 601–602.

"It is true that the Boer has preserved in the South African wilds the ideals and manners of his ancestors of two centuries ago; that in him the seventeenth, and even remnants of the sixteenth, century are found surviving as among few peoples in Europe; but if this survival of the past be taken to imply . . . the immobility of the weak, and therefore unadaptable, nature, not having the vitality and strength to change, it is wholly untrue. Nothing so indicates the dogged, and almost fierce, strength of the South African Boer, as this unique conservatism. Placed in a new environment, removed from all the centres of European culture, thrown out into the wilds of the African deserts, surrounded by primitive conditions of life, and often by none but savage and primitive human creatures, nothing could have been easier, or would have seemed almost more inevitable, than that rapid change should at once have set up in the South African Boer; nothing more difficult, and almost impossible, than for him to maintain that degree of cultivation and civilization which he brought from Europe and already possessed. Again and again, under like conditions, men of lofty European races have been modified wholly. Thrown amid new and primitive surroundings, when, after a few generations of isolation from European life, they come to be considered by us, we find that whatever of culture or knowledge they brought with them has vanished; their religion has atrophied, their habits of life are modified, and among savage peoples, and often interblending with them, they have lost all, or almost all, the old distinctive marks. They are a new human modification, but a modification often lower in the scale of life than the primitive people by whom they were surrounded; a degenerate and

The key to Boer conservatism

decayed people. On the east and west coasts of Africa, in South America, and elsewhere, again and again this has happened. Europeans, not having the conserving strength to retain what they possess, have gone backward in the scale of being. With the South African Boer this has not been so.

"That little flag of seventeenth-century civilization which he took with him into the wilderness two hundred years ago, we still find to-day gallantly flying over his head, untorn and hardly faded after its two centuries' sojourn in the desert. With the quick instinct of a powerful race, the Boer saw, or rather felt, his danger. The traditions, the faith, the manners, of his fathers, he would hold fast by these. To move, to be modified by the conditions about him, was to go backward: he would not move; he planted his foot, and stood still!

"You say he still wears the little short jacket of his great-great-grandfather's great-grandfather? Yes, and had he given it up, it would have been to wear none at all! So, line by line, his wife made it, as his father's forefather's had been. You say he stuck generation after generation to the straight-backed elbow-chair and the hard-backed sofa of his forefathers? Yes, and had he given them up, it would have been to adopt nothing more æsthetic; it would have been to sit on the floor; so he held solemnly by the old elbow-chair and the straight-backed sofa, almost as a matter of faith.

"You say he had only one book, and clung to it with a passion that was almost idolatry? Yes, but had he given up that one book, it could not have been to fill his library with the world's literature; it would have been to have no literature at all! That one book, which he painfully

spelled through, and so mightily treasured, was his only link with the world's great stream of thought and knowledge . . . his one possible inlet to the higher spiritual and intellectual life of the human race. . . . If the Boer had forsaken his Bible, we should have found him to-day a savage, lower than the Bantus about him, because decayed. In nothing has he so shown his strength as in clinging to it.

"To one who wisely studies the history of the African Boer, nothing is more pathetic than this strange, fierce adherence of his to the past. That cry, which unceasingly for generations has rung out from the Boer woman's elbow-chair, 'My children, never forget you are white men! Do always as you have seen your father and mother do!' was no cry of a weak conservatism, fearful of change; it was the embodiment of the passionate determination of a great, little people, not to lose the little it possessed and so sink in the scale of being. To laugh at the conservatism of the Boer is to laugh at the man who, floating above a whirlpool, clings fiercely with one hand to the only outstretching rock he can reach, and who will not relax his hold on it by one finger till he has found something firmer to grasp."

Public education as a means of resisting down-pull

The English settlers in America felt the down-pull, due partly to contact with the aborigines, partly to the rude struggle with the wilderness,[1] but they successfully withstood it by organizing education. Fiske[2] speaks of the "widespread seminal influence of Yale and Harvard, sending their graduates into every town and village as ministers, lawyers, and doctors, schoolmasters and editors,

[1] Eggleston, "The Transit of Civilization," 233–236.

[2] "Old Virginia and her Neighbors," II, 253.

merchants and country squires." And adds: "Among the founders of New England were an extraordinary number of clergymen noted for their learning, such as Hooker and Shepard, Cotton and Williams, Eliot and the Mathers; together with such cultivated laymen as Winthrop and Bradford, familiar with much of the best that was written in the world, and to whom the pen was an easy and natural instrument for expressing their thoughts. The character originally impressed upon New England by such men was maintained by the powerful influence of the colleges and schools, so that there was always more attention devoted to scholarship and to writing than in any of the other colonies. Communities of Europeans, thrust into a wilderness and severed from Europe by the ocean, were naturally in danger of losing their higher culture and lapsing into the crudeness of frontier life. All the American colonies were deeply affected by this situation. While there were many and great advantages in the freedom from sundry Old World trammels, yet in some respects the influence of the wilderness was barbarizing. It was due to the circumstances above mentioned that the New England colonies were more successful than the others in resisting this influence, and avoiding a breach of continuity in the higher spiritual life of the community." [1]

[1] At the same time, stiffness and lack of flexibility in the superior race, blindness to the relativity of its own culture and to the good points of the inferior race, make it impotent to raise the inferior. Says Boutmy: "The French were loved by the Indians, and found in them faithful allies. The Spanish, by intermixing with the natives of Mexico, Peru, and Central America, formed a race which by degrees became initiated into the highest European culture. The Redskins, on the contrary, who lived on the borders of the United States, were cantoned, demoralized,

Conservatism of the Germans at Tiflis

The colony of five or six thousand Würtembergers at Tiflis, descended from the emigrants who left their country because their prince insisted on forcing on his subjects a new hymn-book which they considered too lax in its statements of doctrine, have become encysted in a conservatism which enables them to resist their Russo-Oriental environment. Says Bryce:[1] "Here have they dwelt ever since, preserving all their old ways and habits, cherishing their Protestant faith, and singing out of their dear old hymn-book. Rows of trees run along the principal street; breweries and beer-gardens border it, where the honest burgher sits at night and listens over his supper to a band, as his cousins are doing at the same hour in the suburbs of Stuttgart. Tidy little *Fraus* come out in the evening cool to the doorsteps, and knit and chat among their fair-haired Karls and Gretchens. They have their own schools, far better than any which Russian organization produces; they are nearly all Protestants, with a wholesome Protestant contempt for their superstí-

and decimated. . . . While in two hundred and fifty years only some hundred thousand Indians were partly licked into shape and civilized by the English, twelve millions of aborigines were in the same time raised by Catholic Spain to a far higher degree of civilization. The same inability to comprehend the inferior race, to stoop towards them so as to raise them up and place them on a level with themselves, is strikingly apparent in all the lamentable history of Ireland, in that of India, and in the present administration of Egypt. The English have secured material benefits to these populations: order, security, and riches. Their authority in Hindustan, for example, is exercised in all good faith, honestly and justly; but though a century has gone by they still hold among the mass of the natives the position of an isolated company, in that they have no adherents. Foreigners are they still, and a cry of deliverance would salute their departure, even if they took with them well-being and peace." — "The English People," 101-102.

[1] "Transcaucasia and Ararat," 150.

tious Georgian and Armenian neighbors. They speak nothing but German among themselves, and show little or no sign of taking to Russian ways or letting themselves be absorbed by the populations that surround them. It was very curious to contrast this complete persistency of Teutonism here with the extraordinarily rapid absorption of the Germans among other citizens which one sees going on in the American West, Milwaukee, *e.g.* Here they are exiles from a higher civilization planted in the midst of a lower one; there they lose themselves among a kindred people, with whose ideals and political institutions they quickly come to sympathize."

Most diffusions obey social gravity

The descent of wants

In general, however, the current of imitation runs from superior to inferior. Accent, style of handwriting, gestures, salutations, etiquette, amusements, and modes of entertainment pass from Americans to immigrants, from big boys to little boys in school, from seniors to freshmen, from the travelled to the stay-at-homes, from whites to blacks, from society women to débutantes, from Mrs. Colonel to Mrs. Subaltern. Gurewitsch [1] shows that nearly all existing elements of culture were first taken up by an upper class and penetrated to the masses under the influence of their example. Dress, sported by the leisured to distinguish them from the clouted laborers, becomes clothing. Most cereals began by furnishing spirituous liquors to the well-to-do. Only when they entered the dietary of the poorer classes did their nutritive value begin to be prized. The useful metals furnished ornaments to the rich before they gave tools to the artisan. The ass and the horse were probably domesticated not

[1] " Die Entwickelung der menschlichen Bedürfnisse."

so much for burden or draught purposes as for the saddle, and they were ridden less for comfort than for the dignified and impressive mode of locomotion they afforded. Butter, milk, cheese, and bread, no less than tea, coffee, and tobacco, are an acquired taste, and first became popular because the social superiors had made them reputable. The use of milk spread among the Hindus from the Brahmins. In Egypt and Mexico bread entered the diet of the upper classes while yet the rabble lived on dates and fish.

The descent of culture

Gurewitsch shows that even the artistic and intellectual activities that later became the learned professions began among the leisured as honorific employments, documenting one's sensibility and talent. The sciences owe their beginning largely to the love of displaying intellectual prowess. Philosophy is of gentle origin, but exact science is of humble ancestry, for it was peasant brains that gave upper-class speculations a practical turn and transformed intellectual sport into serious work. Language owes much of its enrichment to the social superior seeking new terms and words in order to avoid the colloquial speech of the vulgar; but the masses would not thus be eluded and by appropriating such refinements they insured the development of the mother-tongue.

The descent of manners and accomplishments

Says Hearn[1] of Japan: "During the Tokugawa period, various diversions or accomplishments, formerly fashionable in upper circles only, became common property. Three of these were of a sort indicating a high degree of refinement: poetical contests, tea ceremonies, and the complex art of flower arrangement. All were introduced

[1] "Japan: An Interpretation," 390–392.

into Japanese society long before the Tokugawa régime. . . . But it was under the Tokugawa Shōgunate that such amusements and accomplishments became national. Then the tea ceremonies were made a feature of female education throughout the country." "It was in this period also that etiquette was cultivated to its uttermost, — that politeness became diffused throughout all ranks, not merely as a fashion, but as an art." "For at least ten centuries before Iyéyasu, the nation had been disciplined in politeness, under the edge of the sword. But under the Tokugawa Shōgunate politeness became particularly a popular characteristic, — a rule of conduct maintained by even the lowest classes in their daily relations."

The descent of ideals of life

It is true that monogamy worked from below upward, embodying the anti-monopoly protest of the masses against upper-class polygamy. But the position of the wife in the monogamic union is patterned upon the rights and privileges of the first or favorite wife in the polygamous household of the upper class. The knightly ideal was worked out by a religious-military caste, adopted enthusiastically by the upper ranks, and then slowly descended, partly by aid of social gravity, to the body of the people. In this process of universalizing, the pattern of the knight has become modified into that of the gentleman. Likewise, Bushido, the knightly ideal that has been, and still is, the mould of Japanese character, was perfected within the fighting caste of the *samurai*. Says Dr. Nitobe:[1] "In manifold ways has Bushido filtered down from the social class where it originated, and acted as a leaven among the masses, furnishing a moral standard for the whole people. The precepts of knighthood, begun at first as

[1] "Bushido," 108.

the glory of the élite, became in time an aspiration and inspiration to the nation at large." [1]

Aristocracies the assimilators of early peoples

Very rapid propagation of a practice not obviously meritorious is a sign of steep social inequalities, just as the rapid flow of rivers indicates that they find their sources in highlands. In the earlier societies aristocracies were the sole avenue by which foreign novelties could gain access to a people. Says Tarde: [2] "Let us picture to ourselves the basin of the Mediterranean in the eighth century before Christ; at the moment of the great Tyrian or Sidonian prosperity, when the Phœnicians, the European carriers of the arts of Egypt and Assyria, were arousing among the Greeks and other peoples a taste for luxurious and beautiful things. These merchants were not, like the modern English, traders in cheap and common fabrics; like the mediæval Venetians, they were wont to display along the sea-beach fine products that appealed to the rich people of all countries, purple garments, perfumes, golden cups, figurines, costly armor, *ex voto* offerings, graceful and charming ornaments. Thus all over, in Sardinia, in Etruria, in Greece, in the Archipelago, in Asia Minor, and in Gaul, the highest classes, the select few, might be seen wearing helmets, swords, bracelets, and tunics which from one end to the other of

[1] The reader may wonder whether a number of the cases cited in this and the three previous paragraphs do not exemplify rational imitation rather than conventional imitation, seeing that what the inferiors borrowed of the superiors was something of real merit, better than anything they had. But the fact is that, until the modern era of democratic enlightenment, the masses were too custom-bound to take a thing for its merit alone. Nothing less than the great prestige of social superiors could overcome the resistance of their brute conservatism, and spread improvements among them.

[2] "Laws of Imitations," 219.

this vast region were more or less alike, while beneath them the plebeian populations continued to be differentiated from one another by their characteristic dress and weapons." A similar drawing together of societies at their tops occurred in the later Middle Ages when Venetian products, spreading throughout Europe, assimilated palaces and castles and city mansions but not cottages and huts. It is for this reason that the dress suit is the same the world over, while the peasant dress is distinctive for each people.[1]

A live aristocracy is progressive and cosmopolitan

An aristocracy has, then, a certain value as an inlet for foreign tastes and ideas. Even though it be not inventive, it can still afford a good launching place for inventions or novelties. In early societies it helps to break the chains of custom, and so may smooth the way for progress. Often an aristocracy is a kind of social stand-pipe, from which under high pressure refined ideas and manners are diffused throughout society.[2] The French upper classes

[1] "The Bohemian nobles and aristocracy became so completely Germanized after the final conquest of the country by Austria in the seventeenth century, that their mode of life at the present day differs but little from that of the same section of society in Austria. It is among the middle and lower classes, and, above all, among the peasantry, that the most typical traits of the national character are met with."—PALMER, "Austro-Hungarian Life."

[2] Says Bodley: "The permeation of civilization to a level in France lower than in other communities, is a gratifying feature of the national life. The country tradesman or the village postmaster often reveals in his unstudied speech the urbanity of good breeding, and cottagers sometimes astonish strangers with their charm of manner. No doubt there are regions of France where the peasants are boorish, and their personal habits unattractive; but, on the whole, their civilization is remarkable. Their stores of household linen, their excellent cooking, the propriety of their attire, though not universal, exist as signs of the force of the French race which resists the disorderliness of its governors. At night-

catch from the English nobility field-sports, tweeds, racing, appreciation of country life, etc. In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries the English aristocracy formed itself upon Italian models, and thereby incidentally injected some Italian culture into the English; later it took to French fashions, fine arts, free thinking, etc. The Roman aristocracy was a medium through which the Romans became acquainted with Greek ideas, culture, and civilization. The Gaulish aristocracy Latinized Gaul. The Russian aristocracy opened Russia to West European influence. The nobles and *samurai* took the lead in Europeanizing Japan. China's stagnation has been owing in part to the absence of an aristocracy. The planter aristocracy in the South imbued even the plain people in that section with chivalry toward women, courteous manners, and a sense of honor that supports a higher plane of commercial honesty than is maintained in the North. In the South the planter class, in the North the little red schoolhouse, was the channel for the injection of culture and refinement into the masses. As soon as an aristocracy becomes timid and obstructive and commits itself to tradition, its social rôle declines.

A society without an upper class must foster higher education

The reciprocal imitation of social equals is far feebler than the unilateral imitation in a graded society. In a society of equals natural centres and routes for the rapid, automatic diffusion of culture are lacking, and

fall the traveller who passes through remote villages sometimes sees through the open cottage door the evening meal neatly laid with a comfort unknown in middle class houses in other civilized lands." "If he enters the humble abode of a collier or of an iron-worker, he may perhaps see him surrounded by his family, taking his dinner served with accessories only found at the tables of the rich in other countries." — "France," I, 205.

hence this social type presumes unusual intelligence and progressiveness in the ordinary man. Otherwise, you get stagnation or fatuity. Catholicism with its hierarchical determination of dogma has remained unified, whereas Protestantism, lacking an aristocracy of pope and bishops, soon split up into hundreds of sects on account of petty theological differences, and saved itself only by regaining a steadying leadership in the form of an educated clergy.

After the arts and professions have become differentiated a titular aristocracy hinders the diffusion of culture

A democratic society without due provision for public education will stagnate; but once adequate agencies for testing and diffusing culture have been established, the prestige of a titular upper class may become oppressive and obstructive. Thus Grant Allen[1] says: "This profound and now ingrained belief in the natural superiority of the Upper Classes reacts in a thousand most immoral ways upon English life. One is never at the end of it. But the worst of all its corollaries is undoubtedly this — that it stands hopelessly in the way of the recognition of all real betternesses. Nobody is anything by the side of the peer. His visible greatness eclipses all else. There is not a country in the world so lord-ridden as England; there is not a country where literary men, artists, thinkers, discoverers, great scientists, great poets, — the prophets and seers of the race, — fill so small a place comparatively in the public estimation." "Nobody who has not lived long in England can fully realize the appalling extent to which this gangrene of lord-worship, county gentlemen-worship, flunkeyism, snobbery, has eaten into the very heart and brain of the nation. . . . Nobody is ever thinking about real distinction; everybody is thinking about this tinsel sham which stands

[1] *Cosmopolitan*, Vol. 30, pp. 659, 662.

visible in place of it. All society is organized on the same extraordinary and unreal basis. . . . There exists in England a Society of Authors, of which Tennyson was, and Meredith is, president. . . . Yet its annual dinner has usually been presided over, not by Thomas Hardy or William Morris, not by Robert Louis Stevenson or Andrew Lang, *but* — by a casual lord, who has written a booklet, fished up by hook or crook from the squares of Belgravia. Would the men of letters in any other country submit to such an insult?" "The existence of a class which monopolizes public attention on the ground of birth alone, stands fatally in the way of the really superior class which deserves and struggles toward recognition in every direction. The artificial betterness eclipses the natural." "Even worse . . . is the effect produced upon the general public. Having a wholly false standard of the admirable set up to them, our people 'meanly admire mean things,' as Thackeray said; they know and understand little or nothing about high ones. The average British middle class is the most debased, materialized, and soulless bourgeoisie in the whole world. Of art, of literature, of poetry, of thought, of philosophy, of movement, it knows and cares nothing. A baronet is more to it than George Meredith or Herbert Spencer. Its ambitions are — to make plenty of money, to live in a big house, to keep a carriage and servants in livery, to hang upon the skirts of the aristocracy if it can, to ape them in everything, and if possible to rise at least as far toward their level as the attainment of a knighthood. Rich families in America are generally aware of the existence of culture and the desirability of acquiring it, or at least some pretence and outer show of it. . . . But in England, most

wealthy people do not even pay this external and formal homage to culture. They do not know it exists; they do not care for it, or admire it, or value it in others. They wish to have a private box at the Oaks, a yacht like Lord Ulster's, a coach and four, an invitation to the garden-party at the neighboring baronet's, perhaps even to own a Derby winner, and to rise to the peerage through beer or cotton. That is all. Of the real betternesses of life they are as innocent as a Central African negro."

"Hence English snobbishness, that terrible, all-pervading trait of English society from top to bottom. Do what you will, you cannot escape from it. If you live long enough in the country, you must inevitably succumb to it; you cannot emancipate even your own conduct from some lingering taint of that pervasive malady. For your neighbors, your servants, your tradesmen, your dependents, all judge you and your acts, not by what you are in yourself, but by the company you keep, the county society you do or do not know, the carriages with footmen that stop at your door or pass it by, the post assigned to you in the ordered hierarchy of the Lord Chamberlain and his flunkeys. No one is quite free from this hateful superstition. One cannot isolate one's self absolutely from one's social atmosphere. . . . England can never be free, wholesome, and whole-souled till she has cast out forever these belated false gods, and learned to pay homage at the shrine of the Genuine Betternesses."

SUMMARY

The social superior is apt to be imitated by the social inferior. This, however, will not be the case if the example of the superior clashes seriously with the instincts or circumstances of the inferior.

Historically the stimulating example of the superior has been a great factor in overcoming the immobility of the mass. At the same time it has often given them false guidance.

Nearly every element in the civilization of a people was once the exclusive possession of an upper class.

In some cases the element has been an outgrowth of the manner of life and thought of the upper class. Usually, however, the upper class has served merely as its launching place.

Being more closely in touch with one another than peoples, aristocracies have provided channels for the diffusion of a cosmopolitan culture.

A society of social equals tends to stagnate unless education, both lower and higher, is amply provided for.

After the various elements of culture have come to be cared for by the special arts and professions, the social rôle of an upper class declines, and its influence may become positively obstructive.

EXERCISES

1. Show that the common people react selectively upon the examples set them by the social superiors.

2. Why does the standard of living rise so promptly with every increase in prosperity that there is scarcely any let-up in economic strain?

3. Why is it easier to save money in the country than in the city?

4. What social changes going on in the South hinder the negroes getting refinement and civilization by the old route, and oblige them to get it *via* institutions like Hampton and Tuskegee?

5. Compare the big university with the small college in power to form and refine the student.

6. Does any good thing spread by social gravity which might not be diffused by the school?

CHAPTER X

THE RADIANT POINTS OF CONVENTIONALITY (*Continued*)

The holder of power is imitated.

The power-holder is copied

This is to say that the hierarchical superior in any authoritative organization — governmental, ecclesiastical, educational, or industrial — is by the very power he wields clothed with prestige in the eyes of some, and becomes therefore a radiant point of imitations. Quite aside from the motive of currying favor, people copy the power-holder because the presumption of superiority attaches to the example set by one on so glittering a pinnacle.

The example of a Roman emperor contagious

Says Dill:[1] "The example of an emperor must always be potent for good or evil. We have the testimony of Pliny and Claudium, separated by an interval of three hundred years, that the world readily conforms its life to that of one man, if that man is the head of the state. Nero's youthful enthusiasm for declamation gave an immense impulse to the passion for rhetoric. His enthusiasm for acting and music spread through all ranks, and the Emperor's catches were sung at wayside inns. M. Aurelius made philosophy the mode, and the Stoic Emperor is responsible for some of the philosophic imposture which moved the withering scorn of Lucian. The Emperor's favorite drug grew so popular that the price of it became almost prohibitory. If the model Vespasian's homely habits had such an effect in reforming society,

[1] "Roman Society from Nero to Marcus Aurelius," 31.

we may be sure that the evil example of his spendthrift predecessors did at least as much to deprave it."

Provincial imitation of Rome

Upon the provincials the example of the Imperial City seemed to cast a magic spell. Dill elsewhere[1] says: —

"Although for generations there was a settled abstinence from centralization on the part of the imperial government, the many varieties of civic constitution in the provinces tended by an irresistible drift to a uniform type of organization. Free and federate communities voluntarily sought the position of a colony or a municipium. Just as the provincial town must have its capitol, with the cult of Jupiter, Juno, and Minerva, or imported the street names Velabrum or Vicus Tuscus, so the little community called itself *respublica*, its commons the *populus*, its curia the senate or the *amplissimus et splendidissimus ordo;* its magistrates sometimes bore the majestic names of prætor, dictator, or censor, in a few cases even of consul. This almost ludicrous imitation of the great city is an example of the magical power which Rome always exercised on her most distant subjects, and even on the outer world of barbarism, down to the last days when her forces were ebbing away."

The head of the state a radiant point

The direction of the current of imitation reveals the seat of power. Always the nobility imitates its king and the masses copy the nobles. "In Byzantium," says Baudrillart, "the court looked to the prince, the city to the court, and the country to the city in the matter of luxury." Louis XIV completed the hierarchization of French society under royalty. The obligation of every noble to attend the court[2] opened routes by which the

[1] *Ibid.*, 204.

[2] See Taine, "The Ancient Régime," 43–46.

vanities and prodigalities of Versailles were automatically diffused throughout France. St. Simon observes: "Luxury is a plague which once introduced becomes an internal, all-devouring cancer, because from the court it is promptly communicated to Paris and throughout the provinces and the army."

National imitation of court luxuries and extravagances

So seductive was the example of the powerful that it was deemed necessary to restrain by sumptuary laws the eagerness of the lower orders to emulate the extravagance of the nobles. Tarde,[1] speaking of "the tendency to ape the hierarchical superior and the rapidity with which this inclination has at all times satisfied itself at the least gleam of prosperity," says: "The frequency of the sumptuary edicts during the entire period of the old régime is a proof of this, just as the multiplicity of a river's dikes bears witness to the impetuosity of its current. The first French Court dates from Charles VIII; but we must not imagine that the imitative contagion of court manners and luxury took several centuries to reach down to the common people of France. From Louis XII on, this influence was felt everywhere. The disasters of the religious wars arrested this development in the sixteenth century, but in the following century it started up again. Then the miseries brought on by the later wars of the Grand Monarch occasioned another set-back. In the course of the eighteenth century there was a fresh start; under the Revolution another reaction. With the First Empire the advance began again on a great scale; but thenceforward it assumed a democratic form which we shall not consider at this moment. Under Francis I, under Henry II, the spread of luxury begun under Louis XII continued. At

[1] "Laws of Imitations," 218.

this period a sumptuary law forbade 'all peasants, laborers, and valets (save those attached to princes) to wear silken doublets or hose overlaid or puffed out with silk.' From 1543 to the time of the League there were eight important ordinances against luxury. 'Some of them,' says Baudrillart, 'apply to every French subject; they forbid the use of cloth of gold, of silver, or of silk.' Such was the elegance prevailing on the eve of the wars of religion." In justifying laws in restraint of trade "one of the reasons most frequently advanced was that France was ruining herself in the purchase of foreign luxuries."

The more successful is imitated by the less successful.

The aristocracy of achievement

In the eyes of some, not the high, but the rising, are clothed with prestige. Lofty station is ambiguous; it may or may not testify to rare prowess. Often it is owed to birth, marriage, favor, or luck. But the man who makes his way upward by achievement furnishes thereby signal proof of his power. Occasionally the strong climber has a proper pride in his achievement and flaunts it in the face of the aristocracy of birth. Pope Urban IV, the son of a cobbler, who himself had worked at the trade, chose a cobbler's tools as his symbol. Senator Sawyer of Wisconsin, who made a fortune in sawmilling, put on his carriage the Latin word *vidi*, which, being translated, signifies "I saw!" The active element in society recognizes that the aristocracy of achievement belongs to the present, not to the past. It stands for some good thing lately done, not for something which has long gone by. "When Theodore Parker first visited Cincinnati, at that time the recognized leader among Western cities, he said that he had made a great discovery, namely, that while the aristocracy of Cincinnati was unquestionably founded

on pork, it made a great difference whether a man killed pigs for himself, or whether his father had killed them. The one was held plebeian, the other patrician. It was the difference, Parker said, between the *stick 'ems* and the *stuck 'ems;* and his own sympathies, he confessed, were with the present tense. It was, in other words, aristocracy in the making." [1]

The "men who do things" dispute the preëminence of the titled

The tendency of men of achievement to wrest social leadership from the hereditary titular aristocracy is brought out by Taine.[2] "On the one hand, the nobles are drawn nearer to the Third-Estate, and on the other, the Third-Estate is drawn nearer to the nobles, actual equality having preceded equality as a right. On the approach of the year 1789 it was difficult to distinguish one from the other in the street. The sword is no longer worn by gentlemen in the cities; they have abandoned embroideries and laces and walk about in plain frock-coats or drive themselves in their cabriolets. 'The simplicity of English customs,' and the customs of the Third-Estate seem to them better adapted to ordinary life. Their prominence proves irksome to them, and they grow weary of being always on parade. Henceforth they accept familiarity that they may enjoy freedom of action and are content 'to mingle with their fellow-citizens without obstacle or ostentation.' . . . An equalization of the ways and externals of life is, indeed, only a manifestation of the equalization of minds and tempers. The antique scenery being torn away indicates the disappearance of the sentiments to which it belonged. . . . If the nobles dress like the bourgeoisie, it is owing to their having

[1] Colonel Higginson in *The Atlantic Monthly,* 93, p. 510.
[2] "Ancient Régime," 311–315.

become bourgeois, that is to say, idlers retired from business, with nothing to do but to talk and amuse themselves. Undoubtedly they amuse themselves and converse like people of refinement; but it is not very difficult to equal them in this respect. Now that the Third-Estate has acquired its wealth a good many plebeians have become people of society. . . . Their sons . . . throw money out of the window with as much elegance as the young dukes with whom they sup. A parvenu with money and intellect soon becomes brightened and his son, if not himself, is initiated: a few years' exercises in an academy, a dancing master, and one of the four thousand public offices which confer nobility, supply him with the deficient externals. . . . After this intermixture of classes and this displacement of character, what superiority rests with the nobles? By what special merit, through what recognized capacity are they to secure the respect of a member of the Third-Estate? . . . What superior education, what familiarity with affairs, what experience with government, what political instruction, what local ascendency, what moral authority, can be alleged to sanction their pretensions to the highest places? In the way of practice, the Third-Estate already does the work, providing the qualified men, the intendants, the ministerial head clerks, the lay and ecclesiastical administrators, the competent laborers of all kind and degrees. . . . Consider the young men who, about twenty years of age in 1780, born in industrious families, accustomed to effort and able to work twelve hours a day, a Barnave, a Carnot, a Rœderer, a Merlin de Thionville, a Robespierre, an energetic race conscious of its strength, criticising their rivals, aware of their weakness, comparing their own

application and education to their levity and incompetency, and, at the moment when youthful ambition stirs within them, seeing themselves excluded in advance from any superior position, consigned for life to subaltern employment, and subjected in every career to the precedence of superiors whom they hardly recognize as their equals. At the artillery examinations where Chérin, the genealogist, refuses plebeians, and where the Abbé Bosen, a mathematician, rejects the ignorant, it is discovered that capacity is wanting among the noble pupils and nobility among the capable pupils, the two qualities of gentility and intelligence seeming to exclude each other, as there are but four or five out of a hundred pupils who combine the two conditions. Now, as society at this time is mixed, such tests are frequent and easy. Whether lawyer, physician, or man of letters, a member of the Third-Estate with whom a duke converses familiarly, who sits in a diligence alongside of a count-colonel of hussars, can appreciate his companion or his interlocutor, weigh his ideas, test his merit, and esteem him at his just value. . . . The nobility having lost a special capacity, and the Third-Estate having acquired a general capacity, they are on a par in education and in aptitudes, the inequality which separated them becoming offensive and becoming useless."

The successful as models and pace-setters

Society is called *democratic* not because a social hierarchy is absent, but because its hierarchy is formed on the competitive rather than the hereditary principle. With us, not kings, princes, and nobles, but bankers, merchant princes, railroad magnates, capitalists, officials, politicians, editors, educators, writers, and artists occupy the high seats, hold the baton, and beat time for the great

social orchestra. Society is no longer a many-storied pagoda of closed castes, but a pyramid whose sides, narrowing toward the top, provide a hierarchy of places into which individuals climb, or to which they are admitted on demonstrating their superior merit. As in wealth, so in eminence and fame, democracy tolerates many inequalities; but these are of recent, not remote, origin. As the boundaries between sections, classes, and nations fade out, the chorus of acclaim that greets the man of transcendent genius becomes vaster, for the bigger the audience, the greater the glory to be distributed among the actors. The apotheosis in our time of Lincoln, Garibaldi, Victor Hugo, Tolstoi, Paderewski, Bernhardt, and Booth reveals among us pinnacles of literary and artistic glory never before dreamt of.

In the United States the educated are contesting the leadership of the successful

The more dynamic a period, the more quickly the social sceptre passes from type to type. Some evidence is accruing that the "men who do things" will be obliged to yield somewhat to the educated. Münsterberg[1] observes: "The most important factor in the aristocratic differentiation of America is higher education and culture, and this becomes more important every day. . . . The social importance ascribed to a college graduate is all the time growing. It was kept back for a long time by unfortunate prejudices. Because other than intellectual forces had made the nation strong, and everywhere in the foreground of public activity there were vigorous and influential men who had not continued their education beyond the public grammar school, so the masses instinctively believed that insight, real energy, and enterprise were better developed in the school of life than in

[1] "The Americans," 600–602.

the world of books. The college student was thought of as a weakling, in a way, who might have many fine theories about things, but who would never take hold to help solve the great national problems — a sort of academic 'mugwump,' but not a leader. The banking house, factory, farm, the mine, the law office, and the political position were all thought better places for the young American man than the college lecture halls. . . . This has profoundly changed now, and changes more with every year. . . . The change has taken place in regard to what is expected of the college student; distrust has vanished, and people realize that the intellectual discipline which he has had until his twenty-second year in the artificial and ideal world is after all the best training for the great duties of public life, and that academic training, less by its subject-matter than by its methods, is the best possible preparation for practical activity. . . . The leading positions in the disposal of the nation are almost entirely in the hands of men of academic training, and the mistrust of the theorizing college spirit has given place to a situation in which university presidents and professors have much to say on all practical questions of public life, and the college graduates are the real supporters of every movement toward reform and civilization."

Men of achievement are imitated with more discrimination than an upper class

In a society of hereditary grades the superior is copied by the inferior in everything; the stream of imitation flows mostly one way, is unilateral. But where the grading is elective or social, the superior is imitated most in that particular excellence which has won him acclaim and distinction. Hence no one person or class sets the pace in everything. A Kipling is imitated in point of

literary style, a Booth in acting, a Gibson in drawing, a Sargent in painting, a Brummel in dress, a Corbett in pugilistics. But the leader in one thing follows in some other things, so that the imitation becomes multilateral, and, to a certain extent, rational.

Nevertheless, such rationalizing does not proceed very far for the reason stated by Cooley when he says:[1] "When there is a real personal superiority, ascendency is seldom confined to the traits in which this is manifested, but, once established in regard to these traits, it tends to envelop the leader as a whole, and to produce allegiance to *him* as a concrete person. This comes, of course, from the difficulty of breaking up and sifting that which presents itself to the senses, and through them to the mind, as a single living whole. And as the faults and weaknesses of a great man are commonly much easier to imitate than his excellences, it often happens, as in the case of Michael Angelo, that the former are much more conspicuous in his followers than the latter."

The rich are imitated by the poor.

Among Mammon worshippers the example of the rich is infectious

There are times and circles in which wealth sums up the Humanly Desirable, and the possession of wealth creates an irresistible presumption of superiority. Then one verifies the saying of the Hindu epic poet, "That which is called *the wealthy* is a very important member of the state; for verily a man with money is the top of all creation." Then, in matters of opinion and conviction as well as in the trappings and formalities of life, the rich will wield the baton, no matter how destitute they may be of outlook, ideas, taste, or refinement. When the worship of Mammon is widespread the millionnaire is a high authority, not

[1] "Human Nature and the Social Order," 309.

only in the technique of money-making, but in everything else as well. He is interviewed on every fresh topic that crops up in public discussion. His crassest stupidities have the indescribable charm of coming from a "solid" man. A string of platitudes in the heavy Olympian style of Crœsus is as much prized as a leaf from a Sibylline Book. When he expounds the vulpine ethics that justify his career, the Sermon on the Mount is rocked to its base. Upon the nod or frown of the boxes hangs the fate of the artist, the composer, the playwright. The pastimes, entertainments, and extravagances of the rich are eagerly noted and enthusiastically aped by the multitude immediately below them in the cash scale. Small fry mortgage their homes to acquire an automobile which serves them about as well as an eight-day clock in the hut of a negro who can't tell time.[1]

The rise of the American dollarocracy

Yellow journalism itself originated in the vertigo that a generation ago began to seize upon the people of the Northern cities when they contemplated the rich. It was born in 1882 out of a conversation in which Mr. Pulitzer, of the *New York World*, thus noted the rise of the dollarocracy.[2]

"The trouble with the American people to-day is their assumed independence. They imagine that they are

[1] "So mad has the race for social supremacy become that many owners of houses worth from $5000 to $10,000, which they have acquired after years of toil and saving, are mortgaging them in order to buy automobiles. So fearful are they of being outshone by their neighbors that they are resorting to the most reckless extravagance and trying to present the appearance of wealth on an income not exceeding $150 a month." From the report of a committee of the New Era Women's Club of Pittsburg as given in the press of July 18, 1907.

[2] *Public Opinion*, XXXVIII, 269.

alone in the universe. They are wealth-mad. They see it on every side of them — money and the work of money. They have created fortunes, and they don't know how to spend them. Those who have not succeeded in amassing money worship those who have, and these worshippers are in the majority. Their every thought is to become like the rich; to emulate their every act and success. It is a sensation with them; they crave sensation.

"To be rich is the one object of the masses in every walk of life in this country to-day. There is nothing akin to this money craze in the older countries of Europe, but in place of it they have an aristocracy there. They expend their sentiment on that. . . . Give the people what they want. Give them an aristocracy. Tell them how these men and women have become rich. Tell the people how they spend their money; what they say; how they live; what their ambitions are. Tell it with pictures. Tell it interestingly and we will sell this paper."

Mr. Watterson [1] thus pronounces upon the new sceptre-holders from the view-point of an older and finer upper class.

Barbarizing influence of the dollar-ocracy

"The Smart Set is rotten through and through. It has not one redeeming feature. All its ends are achieved by money and largely by the unholy use of money. If one of them proposes to go into politics, he expects to buy his way, and the rogues who have seats in Congress or foreign appointments to sell, see that he pays the price. If one of them wants to marry a lord, she expects to buy him, and the titled scamps who seek to recoup their broken fortunes see that she pays the price. Their influence is to the last degree corruptive. Their hangers-

[1] "Compromises of Life," 461 *passim*.

on and retainers are only such as money will buy. Nine out of every ten of the fortunes behind them will not bear scrutiny; when it is not actually got by foul means, it yet goes back to the grimiest antecedents, the wash-tub and the stable yard. . . . Must these uncleanly birds of gaudy, and therefore of conspicuous, plumage fly from gilded bough to bough, fouling the very air as they twitter their affectations of social supremacy and no one to shy a brick and to cry, 'Scat, you devils!' . . . From Maine to California there are myriads of cheerful, comfortable homes where 'Dad' and 'Mam' and 'Granny,' yea, and 'Molly' and 'Polly' and 'Susey' and 'Sis' lead clean and wholesome lives, happy in their ignorance of evil such as in the mouths of the Smart Set is familiar as household words; not merely an honest, brawny people, who work for a living, and would scorn to have any earls or marquises sitting around on their cracker barrels, but educated, cultivated people, with plenty of money for all of the reasonable luxuries and adornments of life, who would blush to sit at table with these unclean birds and to listen to their chatter."

The spread of the pecuniary civilization

Not long ago a Newport divine, preaching against divorce, pleaded with his fashionable congregation to order themselves more strictly in things marital. "Remember," he said to them in effect, "your example in family matters is followed by eighty millions of people." Shortly after an eminent Southern writer hotly denounced the clerical admonition as a slander, and denied that any considerable section of the American people heeds the example of the Newport plutocracy in any serious relation of life. The rebuke was just, yet the virus of wealth-worship spreads and area after area is infected. Baltimore, Richmond,

Charleston, Savannah, Louisville, — strongholds of a different prestige, — begin to suspect that they are provincial. The cold-cash standard of human excellence, having conquered the big cities in the North, is now reducing the smaller centres and the country.[1]

[1] In her introduction to "Fads and Fancies," a sumptuous volume of "puffs" of the leaders in New York society, a distinguished literary woman, Mrs. Burton Harrison, remarks: —

"Toward the middle of the nineteenth century we find the sociologists and commentators upon our best society beginning to discuss the points with sufficient vigor and lifting up their voices in public print against the decadence of republican manners and customs, resulting from the great wealth and material prosperity of our country. Then, as now, it was New York that came in for the lion's share of the abuse.

"Boston, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Washington still held to their old traditions. Richmond, Charleston, and Savannah were hedged behind a thorny growth of antique customs and exclusiveness. Chicago and San Francisco were yet to be heard from as rivals in the race for civic preëminence and social outlay. . . .

"What would the valiant crusader against 'hypocrisy, the devil, and the luxury of Corinth,' as set forth by his charming and pungent Potiphar Papers, say to the multiplication of the outward and visible signs of plutocratic life in America to-day — a half century farther down the stream of time?

"The same society endures, has surprised itself, astonished the world by its magnificence, goes on increasing the methods of ridding itself of superfluous fortunes — and as yet no fire from Heaven has fallen into its ranks.

"We cannot gainsay the fact that wealth and the power it brings rule supreme in our land. Especially would it be pains thrown away to try to epitomize the best society of America as represented by the present dwellers in cosmopolitan New York, without continual reference to the golden basis upon which it stands."

SUMMARY

The possessor of power bedazzles and fascinates.

Currents of imitation radiate from rulers.

In monarchies the extravagance of the court spreads outward and has a pernicious effect upon the tastes and wants of the people.

If a titular aristocracy be closed, a moment comes when its social leadership is disputed by the men of distinguished achievement.

In a society without a hereditary upper class the conspicuously successful are looked up to and copied.

The imitation of the successful is altogether more discriminating and rational than the imitation of a titled nobility.

When wealth is supremely coveted, the rich are admired and imitated.

The diffusion of pecuniary standards of excellence from the dollarocracy whets greed and lowers the moral tone of society.

EXERCISES

1. What elements enter into the standard by which a person is valued in your community, and what is their order of importance?

2. Is the attitude of the public the same toward the man who has married money, as toward the man who has made money?

3. Show the difference in tone and standards between the self-made rich and the hereditarily rich. Contrast their influence on society.

4. If the successful compose the influential social class, what will be the effect upon the birth rate? Upon the frequency of heart-failure and neurasthenia?

5. If the general avidity for wealth be intensified, what will be the effect upon commercial, professional, and political ethics? Upon the motives to social intercourse and to matrimony?

6. Show how training in a professional school instead of an office favors the efficiency standard of human worth as against the cash standard.

CHAPTER XI

THE RADIANT POINTS OF CONVENTIONALITY (*Concluded*)

The city is imitated by the country.

High potential of the city

City dwellers never keep abreast of country dwellers in reproduction, and hence the city is constantly fed with the overflow from the farms, an overflow that is, in a sense, the cream of the rural population, for it consists of stirring and ambitious persons who migrate to the city early in the active period of life. Freshened constantly with such effervescent elements, the city never becomes traditional and stagnant, as it might well do if it raised its own population. Moreover, these eager young immigrants, fleeing the deadness of quiet neighborhoods and the tedium of humdrum villages, sharpen and brighten one another. Outworn traditions, narrow local sentiments, and obstinate provincial prejudices meet and cancel one another. A type of mentality emerges more impressionable and plastic than that of the farms. The shutters of the intellect are swung back. The mind becomes alert and supple. Freed from the hampering net of kin and class ties, the *individual* appears. The city is, therefore, a hotbed, where seed ideas quickly germinate. Its progressive population naturally places itself at the head of the social procession and sets the pace for the slower country dwellers.

Says a distinguished economist:[1] "The two great

[1] Professor Jastrow in Congress of Arts and Sciences, VII, 771–772.

The cities pass the torch to the rest of society

founders of modern pedagogy, Rousseau and Pestalozzi, have sprung from cities. The universities can, in their modern organization, be traced back, in Europe as well as in America, to the model established by Bologna and Paris, centres of urban culture. The numerous foundations of universities in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries were made exclusively in cities; they represented the reaction against the older, monastic, world-shunning learnedness, as also only those monastic orders took hold of them, which in the two preceding centuries had sought their seats not in rural loneliness, but in the cities." "The city acquires cultural treasures, but only in order to let them radiate and in order to begin, thereupon, the work again on new materials. Its educational work is a constant renunciation of acquired privileges. This is shown especially clearly in America in the history of the library movement. This movement has begun especially in the cities. First it was the ambition of each city to surpass the country by the possession of a public library, accessible to everybody. To-day it is the ambition of the cities to induce the country to follow their example."

The cities cast a spell upon the country

Thanks to its real superiorities, everything about the city comes at last to have a glamour. Thus Mahaffy[1] writes of the Hellenistic period: "The brilliancy of city life, the comforts and conveniences with which the citizens became supplied, the privileges which they obtained, gave to all this epoch of men a strong tendency to migrate from the country into the towns. So it was that to live in villages like the *Pagani* of the Romans, came to suggest boorishness and want of refinement. In the book of

[1] "The Progress of Hellenism in Alexander's Empire," 122.

Revelation, which concludes our New Testament, the ideal of the future is no longer the Elysian Fields, but the New Jerusalem come down from heaven, a city with walls and gates and splendid streets. This and not fair glades and trees and streams was the conception of the highest happiness produced by average Hellenism." Christianity owes much to city prestige. Its Founder labored on the countryside and amid the hamlets, yet so much hinged on the city reaction upon his work that few realize that Jesus passed but a few days in Jerusalem. Paul preached in the cities, and Christianity spread from the great urban centres to the towns, and lastly to the country, where the lowest class of peasants (*pagani*) dwelt. Writes Pliny to Trajan: "This contagious evil has spread not only in the cities, but also in the towns and villages." In the same way modern socialism is of city origin and propagation, and sometime, perhaps, it will be combated by city capitalists alarming, organizing, and exploiting the conservatism of the rural districts and of rural sections like the South and the far West.

The citizens of the great capital constitute a kind of aristocracy

The city as fountainhead of initiative and examples is well described by Tarde:[1] "In the hypertrophy of great cities and, especially, of capitals, where oppressive privileges take root and ramify, while the last traces of the privileges of the past are jealously effaced, is to be found the kind of inequality which modern life creates and which it finds indispensable, in fact, in managing and promoting the great currents of its industrial production and consumption, *i.e.*, of imitation on an immense scale. The course of a Ganges like this necessitated a Himalayas. Paris is the Himalayas of France. Paris unquestionably

[1] "Laws of Imitations," 226.

rules more royally and more orientally over the provinces than the court ever ruled over the city. Every day the telegraph or the railroad distributes its ready-made ideas, wishes, conversations, revolutions, its ready-made dresses and furniture, throughout the whole of France. The suggestive and imperious fascination which it instantaneously exerts over this vast territory is so profound, so complete, and so sustained, that it no longer surprises any one. . . . It is futile for the city laborer to consider himself a democrat in working for the destruction of the middle classes; he is none the less an aristocrat himself, the much admired and much envied aristocrat of the peasant. The peasant is to the laborer what the laborer is to his employer."

Royal pride may sap the country to build up the capital

At times the domination of the city over the rest of society has been wantonly exaggerated. The policy of monarchs in wringing money from the people in order to beautify and aggrandize the capital, as well as the enforced concentration of feudal nobles at the royal court, deadened the country, causing the life of the province to become mean, dwarfed, servile, and apologetic.

The deadening of the provinces in monarchical France

Taine[1] portrays how the concentration policy of the French kings had glorified city at the expense of country: "None remain in the provinces except the poor rural nobility; to live there one must be behind the age, disheartened or in exile. The king's banishment of a seignior to his estates is the highest disgrace; to the humiliation of this fall is added the insupportable weight of *ennui*. The finest château on the most beautiful site is a frightful 'desert'; nobody is seen there save the grotesques of a small town or the village rustics. 'Exile

[1] "The Ancient Régime," 45–49.

alone,' says Arthur Young, 'forces the French nobility to do what the English prefer to do, and that is to live on their estates and embellish them.' . . . Court historians, on mentioning a ceremony, repeatedly state that 'all France was there'; in fact, every one of consequence in France is there. . . . Paris and the court becomes, accordingly, the necessary sojourn of all fine people. In such a situation departure begets departure; the more a province is forsaken the more they forsake it. 'There is not in the kingdom,' says the Marquis of Mirabeau, 'a single estate of any size of which the proprietor is not in Paris and who, consequently, neglects his buildings and châteaux.'" "A country in which the heart ceases to impel the blood through its veins presents a sombre aspect. Arthur Young, who travelled over France between 1787 and 1789, is surprised to find at once such a vital centre and such dead extremities. Between Paris and Versailles the double file of vehicles going and coming extends uninterruptedly for five leagues from morning until night. The contrast on other roads is very great. Leaving Paris by the Orleans road, says Arthur Young, 'we met not one stage or diligence for ten miles; only two messageries and very few chaises, not a tenth of what would have been met had we been leaving London at the same hour.' On the highroad near Narbonne, 'for thirty-six miles,' he says, 'I came across but one cabriolet, half a dozen carts and a few women leading asses.' Throughout this country the inns are execrable. . . . It is only in very large towns that there is any civilization and comfort. At Nantes there is a superb theatre 'twice as large as Drury Lane and five times as magnificent. *Mon Dieu!* I cried to myself, do all these wastes, the deserts,

the heath, ling, furze, broom, and bog that I have passed for three hundred miles lead to this spectacle? You pass at once from beggary to profusion.' . . . Paris magistrates in exile at Bourges in 1753 and 1754 give the following picture of that place: 'A town in which no one can be found, with whom you can talk at your ease on any topic whatever, reasonably or sensibly; nobles, three-fourths of them dying of hunger, rotting with pride of birth, keeping apart from men of the robe and finance, and finding it strange that the daughter of a tax-collector, married to a councillor of the parliament of Paris, should presume to be intelligent and entertain company; citizens of the grossest ignorance, the sole support of this species of lethargy in which the minds of most of the inhabitants are plunged.' . . . Says Arthur Young: 'At Claremont, I dined or supped five times at the *table d'hôte* with from twenty to thirty merchants, tradesmen, officers, etc., and it is not easy for me to express the insignificance, — the inanity of their conversation. Scarcely any politics at a moment when every bosom ought to beat with none but political sensations. The ignorance or the stupidity of these people must be absolutely incredible; not a week passes without their country abounding with events that are analyzed and debated by the carpenters and blacksmiths of England.' The cause of this inertia is manifest; interrogated on their opinions, all reply, 'We are of the provinces and we must wait to know what is going on in Paris.'" "The provinces form an immense stagnant pond." "Such is the languor or, rather, the prostration, into which local life falls when the local chiefs deprive it of their presence, action, or sympathy."

Such wilful subordination of country to city and of

provinces to capital is vicious. It causes a dying of the extremities. In every society there ought to be a number of vigorous local centres, tenacious of what is best in their past and proud of their distinctive characteristics. The "Celtic Revival" inspires in the gifted Irish a fire and spirit they would never have if they looked for no success save that which bears the London stamp. A national festival like the "Eistedfodd" lifts the Welsh people far higher than they would rise under the inspiration of London-made poetry and song. Scotch genius owes much to a literary centre like Edinburgh, and it is untoward that the Scotch are beginning to distrust Edinburgh judgments as "provincial." Paris-ridden France is seeking to revive her outlying centres by planting and strengthening provincial universities. The nationalist movements in central and eastern Europe — Finnic, Lettish, Polish, Magyar, Czechish — represent not only the revival of submerged peoples, but also the resuscitation of ancient towns reduced to provincial pettiness by the insolent domination of a dynasty-made metropolis like Vienna, St. Petersburg, or Berlin.

The revival of local centres

In America there prevails among the people a feeling that somehow the city gives a higher rank than the country. Among the farmers one hears such expressions as: "I wonder how they like coming down to living in the country, after being city folks?" "The farm will be quite a comedown to him!" "Oh, she feels big now that she is a city lady!" What a triumphal march the city girl enjoys in the little village! What a sensation the city beau creates among the rural beauties! This halo is attributable to the splendor of urban existence, to the apparent affluence and high social standing of city dwellers in con-

What gives the city its glamour

sequence of their conspicuous consumption and conspicuous leisure, to the polished manners of the urbanite, to the fact that all the extremely rich are in the city. Here the great and famous are gathered; here are the libraries, the works of art, and the higher institutions of learning. City work seems superior; though it cannot all be dignified as brain-work, it is at least semi-professional, clerical, light hand work, highly skilled, or has an artistic side; at any rate the greater part is not ordinary manual labor. On the other hand, farm work is manual, toilsome, dirty, and to it a stigma still clings. The cartoons and gibes of a jeering metropolitan press against the "hayseed" and the uncomplimentary allusions of print in general still more emphasize this notion of urban superiority. The consequence is that country youth imagine they rise in life by becoming city residents. Especially does this city prestige tend to hold people in the cities, even when economic conditions are more favorable in the country.

The limits to metropolitan leadership

Happily, however, cities are not pace-setters in everything. In matters of fancy, taste, and caprice New York, it is true, leads the country. Foreign artists, singers, actors, musicians, and lecturers make their *début* there, and the verdict of the metropolitan critics gives the cue to the rest of the country. Books, plays, and operas are launched in New York. Most of the periodical literature is edited there. Metropolitan fashions, amusements, pastimes, drinks, topical songs, books, and magazines enjoy everywhere the right of way. But, in matters of interest and reason, prestige alone can confer no such leadership. New York's financial policy, political bias, municipal projects, or commercial standards are not

accepted forthwith as models by the American people. The discoveries of her scientists, the mechanisms of her inventors, the reasoning of her theologians, the operations of her surgeons, the decisions of her judges, the methods of her educators, the régime of her sanatoriums, do not instantly become patterns for the country at large, because here reason and criticism have full play. We have seen public attention arrested by an educational innovation at Quincy, Massachusetts, the therapeutic methods at Battle Creek, Michigan, the welfare work at Dayton, Ohio, the industrial *modus vivendi* at Leclaire, Illinois, the coöperative successes of Greeley, Colorado, the adjustment of church and public school at Stillwater, Minnesota, the plan of city government at Galveston, Texas, the legislative reference bureau at Madison, Wisconsin. This willingness to take light from any quarter in the serious affairs of life indicates that Americans are far from succumbing to the baleful spell of a glittering metropolis that pulls local communities out of their true orbit to make them mere satellites.

In democracies majorities are imitated.

The authority of the greater number

No one has accounted for this so well as De Tocqueville:[1] "When the ranks of society are unequal, and men unlike each other in condition, there are some individuals wielding the power of superior intelligence, learning, and enlightenment, whilst the multitude are sunk in ignorance and prejudice. Men living at these aristocratic periods are therefore naturally induced to shape their opinions by the standard of a superior person, or superior class of persons, whilst they are averse to recognize the infallibility of the mass of the people.

[1] "Democracy in America," II, ch. II.

Among equals the majority has prestige

"The contrary takes place in ages of equality. The nearer the people are drawn to the common level of an equal and similar condition, the less prone does each man become to place implicit faith in a certain man or a certain class of men. But his readiness to believe the multitude increases, and opinion is more than ever mistress of the world. Not only is common opinion the only guide which private judgment retains amongst a democratic people, but amongst such a people it possesses a power infinitely beyond what it has elsewhere. At periods of equality, men have no faith in one another, by reason of their common resemblance; but this very resemblance gives them almost unbounded confidence in the judgment of the public; for it would not seem probable, as they are all endowed with equal means of judging, but that the greater truth should go with the greater number.

Pressure of the minds of all upon the reason of each

"When the inhabitant of a democratic country compares himself individually with all those about him, he feels with pride that he is the equal of any one of them; but when he comes to survey the totality of his fellows, and to place himself in contrast with so huge a body, he is instantly overwhelmed by the sense of his own insignificance and weakness. The same equality which renders him independent of each of his fellow-citizens, taken severally, exposes him alone and unprotected to the influence of the greater number. The public has therefore, among a democratic people, a singular power, which aristocratic nations cannot conceive of; for it does not persuade to certain opinions, but it enforces them, and infuses them into the intellect by a sort of enormous pressure of the minds of all upon the reason of each."

To this prestige of vast numbers Bryce [1] has given a name:—

The fatalism of the multitude

"Out of the mingled feelings that the multitude will prevail, and that the multitude, because it will prevail, must be right, there grows a self-distrust, a despondency, a disposition to fall into line, to acquiesce in the dominant opinion, to submit thought as well as action to the encompassing power of numbers. Now and then a resolute man will, like Athanasius, stand alone against the world. But such a man must have, like Athanasius, some special spring of inward strength." "This tendency to acquiescence and submission, this sense of the insignificance of individual effort, this belief that the affairs of men are swayed by large forces whose movement may be studied but cannot be turned, I have ventured to call the Fatalism of the Multitude. It is often confounded with the tyranny of the majority, but is at bottom different, though, of course, its existence makes tyranny by the majority easier and more complete." "In the fatalism of the multitude there is neither legal nor moral compulsion; there is merely a loss of resisting power, a diminished sense of personal responsibility and of the duty to battle for one's own opinions, such as has been bred in some peoples by the belief in an overmastering fate. It is true that the force to which the citizen of the vast democracy submits is a moral force, not that of an unapproachable Allah, nor of the unchangeable laws of matter. But it is a moral force acting on so vast a scale, and from causes often so obscure, that its effect on the mind of the individual may well be compared with that which religious or scientific fatalism creates."

[1] "The American Commonwealth," II, ch. LXXXIV.

The élite alone should lead

Some argue that democracy means the ascendency of majorities not in government alone, but in all spheres of opinion and feeling; that, while it lifts up the many, it saps the independence and self-confidence of the exceptional man; that by discrediting, even overawing and silencing, the élite few, it condemns society at last to conformity, mediocrity, and stagnation. This indictment, were it true, would be crushing, for in a highly dynamic society unguided majorities are apt to be wrong. Save in matters of immediate and general personal experience, as, for example, family relations, sex relations, etc., the profoundest truths, the highest ideals, the best standards, will first appear in an élite minority. Just as the lofty peaks catch the dawn long before its light can flood the plain, so, in an advancing society, there will be, in the earlier stages of every discussion, a minority that is nearer right than any majority. This is not to say that in any particular division of opinion the smaller number is more likely to be right than the greater. The presumption is with it only when it includes the élite.

The democracy of to-day heeds the élite

As a matter of fact, however, modern democracy, while it spurns privileged orders and authoritative direction, does not undervalue the proven worthiest or refuse their guidance. Unheeding the sham tinsel élite, it reveres and hearkens to the genuine, the tested élite. It was the poor benighted Demos before the days of the press, the public school, the voluntary association, and a margin of leisure, that followed the leader who would echo its delusions and prejudices. In America the plain people have a great respect for those of exceptional achievement, and confidence in the expert is rapidly growing.

So ingrained is imitation of those above us in the social

hierarchy that even the idea and practice of social equality which undermined the prestige of the old social classes owed much to the example of these same classes. Says Tarde:[1] "Everything, even progress toward equality, is effected by imitation and by the imitation of superior classes. Before political and social equality between all classes of society was possible or even conceivable, it had to be established on a small scale in one of them. Now, it was first seen to occur on top. From Louis XI to Louis XVI the different grades of nobility which had formerly, in the time of great vassals and of pure feudalism, been separated by such impassable distances were steadily levelled, and, thanks to the crushing prestige of royalty and to the comparative multiplicity of points of contact between all men of gentle birth, fusion was brought about between the nobility of the sword and the nobility of the gown. Now, strange to say, while this levelling was being accomplished on top, the innumerable sections of the middle classes and the common people continued to hold aloof from one another with even intensified class vanity up to the eve of '89. Read in De Tocqueville, for example, the enumeration of the different grades of upper, middle, and lower bourgeoisie in a town of the old régime of this date. There was certainly more antagonism between the consuls and the petty merchants of the eighteenth century than between those of the Middle Ages. The seeming paradox may therefore be safely advanced that the real preparatory work in behalf of modern equality was carried on in the past, not by the middle classes, but by the nobility."

Social equality started in the upper class and spread by social gravity

A curious confirmation of Tarde's paradox is furnished

[1] "Laws of Imitations," 230–231.

by Mahan[1] in explaining that laxity of discipline in the old aristocratic French navy which so often led to disaster. "This class feeling carried with it a curious sentiment of equality among officers of very different grades, which injuriously affected the spirit of subordination. Members, all, of a privileged order, their equality as such was more clearly recognized than their inequality as junior and senior." "Disputes, arguments, suggestions, between two gentlemen forgetful of their relative rank, would break out at critical moments, and the feeling of equality, which wild democratic ideas spread throughout the fleets of the republic, was curiously forestalled by that existing among the members of a most haughty aristocracy."

SUMMARY

The city is fed constantly with superior immigrants in the active period, who reciprocally emancipate and stimulate one another.

Wherever they may have originated, most cultural treasures find their way to the general population by way of the city.

Owing to the civilization it contributes or communicates, a presumption of superiority comes at last to attach to everything urban.

The splendor of visible consumption in the city, and the more attractive aspect of its work, lend the city a glamour.

The undue prestige of a metropolis may oppress and dwarf local life.

In a healthy society the prestige of the city will not be so overshadowing but that a good thing launched at any obscure point will speedily make its way.

When ideas of social equality prevail, the majority has prestige and is imitated.

A society may be democratic without repudiating the leadership of the genuine élite.

[1] "Influence of Sea Power on History," 332.

EXERCISES

1. What was the origin of the social prestige that in England attaches to the ownership of an estate?

2. What effect does it have upon the balance of power between country and city?

3. Explain why in the country *birth*, in the city *wealth*, is the chief basis of social rating.

4. Where should a college be located — in the city or in the small town?

5. Should the capital of a commonwealth be its chief city, or some centrally located town?

6. Show that an aristocracy is never identical with the élite.

7. Compare the pecuniary burden on society of an aristocracy and an élite.

8. What social policies tend to discover the true élite, and throw the leadership of society into their hands?

CHAPTER XII

CUSTOM IMITATION

Custom is down imitation

By custom is meant the transmission of a way of *doing;* by tradition is meant the transmission of a way of *thinking* or *believing.* In this work, however, the former term will be used in a wider sense as *any transmission of psychic elements from one generation to another.* Custom imitation and conventionality imitation are sharply distinct from each other. One is a borrowing from ancestors or forerunners, the other from contemporaries. If we figure the life of society as a flowing stream, then we think of the one as *down* imitation, the other as *cross* imitation. To be sure, the same practice may be at one stage a conventionality, at a later stage a custom. When it radiates out from some point in society, spreading in virtue of the prestige of its source, it is a conventionality. When, after making such conquest, it comes to be transmitted from father to son in virtue of the prestige the old have in the eyes of the young, it has become a custom.

Contrast of custom and conventionality

When we imitate a contemporary, we are obliged usually to surrender some rooted practice or belief. Our imitation is a substitution, and has, therefore, to overcome the force of habit. The Occidentalizing yesterday of the Japanese, to-day of the Chinese, involves a jungle-clearing, a tearing up of vast psychic growths that could never occur save in consequence of events which make a profound impression on minds. Nothing less than war,

disaster, invasion, or civil strife can shatter for whole populations the matrix in which customs lie imbedded. On the other hand, parents set us copy as infants when our minds are blank, our habits unformed; when we lack all means of test or canons of criticism; when their example and dogmas do not contradict anything already established in the mind. The *tabula rasa* of childhood makes early imitation an acquisition rather than a substitution. Moreover, as between adults, imitation marks the outcome of a spiritual struggle. Groups, classes, races, in their primary social contact, virtually face the question, "Shall I fascinate you with my way, or will you fascinate me with your way?" The power of one to sway the other is measured by the excess of its action over the reaction of the other. Sometimes the intellectual struggle is a draw, and neither influences the other or else each borrows from the other in a rational way. But, as between parents and children, the inequality is so great that the latter are rarely ever able to offer any effective resistance. Hence, the ascendency of the parents is almost unlimited.

Association with parents necessary to custom transmission

It is the broad overlap of generations in the human species that makes possible transmission by custom. When, as in the lower species, the young are so well equipped with strength and instincts that they can take care of themselves from the moment they are hatched or born, they leave the parents promptly and there can be no imitation of the elders. What the parent transmits is *instinct*, not *custom*, and this by way of heredity, not by way of association. In the human species, however, the long period of childhood helplessness insures protracted plasticity, *i.e.*, an ample time for *taking in*, and long association with the parents, in the course of which their

knowledge, practical wisdom, arts of life, beliefs, valuations, and sentiments are copied spontaneously, even unconsciously.

Custom and heredity. Analogies

In organic life there is nothing corresponding to conventionality imitation, for there is no physiological cross-transmission among the birds of a flock or the wolves of a pack. But the analogy between custom imitation and heredity is very striking. Both are modes of transmission, and both convey mental and moral characters from parents to offspring.

Just as acquired characteristics are (probably) transmissible, so the practices and beliefs received from the parents are liable to be modified in the lifetime of the individual, and to be passed on to his children not quite as he received them. The variations that break the current of heredity can be compared to the inventions and discoveries — the innovations — that break the otherwise peaceful descent of the stream of tradition. Just as between competing structures (gills and lungs), or competing characters (fur and hibernation), there is a struggle for existence resulting in the survival of the better adapted, so between conflicting customs there is an eventual adoption of the more useful, and between inconsistent traditions there is an ultimate acceptance of the more reasonable.

In society as well as in life the recent is the variable

The longer a species remains in an unchanging environment, the more faithfully does heredity transmit, the rarer is "throw back." Thus old species are stable, while varieties and hybrids of recent origin — new flowers or vegetables, fancy poodles or pigeons — are liable not to breed true. The same holds for practices and beliefs. The longer they have been transmitted, the more precise they become and the more fearful is each generation of

departing from them. Just as the remoter ancestor is the bigger god, so the older custom has more prestige and is reproduced with the greater scrupulousness. Thus Bagehot observes:[1] —

"In whatever way a man has done anything once, he has a tendency to do it again; if he has done it several times he has a great tendency so to do it, and what is more, he has a great tendency to make others do it also. He transmits his formed customs to his children by example and by teaching. This is true now of human nature, and will always be true, no doubt. But what is peculiar in early societies is that over most of these customs there grows sooner or later a semi-supernatural sanction. The whole community is possessed with the idea that if the primal usages of the tribe be broken, harm unspeakable will happen in ways you cannot think of, and from sources you cannot imagine. As people nowadays believe that 'murder will out,' and that great crime will bring even an earthly punishment, so in early times people believed that for any breach of sacred custom certain retribution would follow. To this day many semicivilized races have great difficulty in regarding any arrangement as binding and conclusive unless they can also manage to look at it as an inherited usage. Sir H. Maine, in his last work,[2] gives a most curious case. The English government in India has in many cases made new and great works of irrigation of which no ancient Indian government ever thought; and it has generally left it to the native village community to say what share each man of the village should have in the water; and the village authorities have accordingly

[1] "Physics and Politics," 141–143.
[2] "Village Communities," 110.

laid down a series of most minute rules about it. But the peculiarity is that in no case do these rules 'purport to emanate from the personal authority of their author or authors; . . . nor do they assume to be dictated by a sense of equity; there is always, I am assured, a sort of fiction under which some customs as to the distribution of water are supposed to have emanated from a remote antiquity; although, in fact, no such artificial supply had ever been so much as thought of.'"

Custom much more elastic than heredity

But there are differences as well as resemblances between custom and heredity. We inherit only from ancestors, but in childhood we imitate the one salient copy, whether it is the example of a parent or of another. The orphan, foundling, or foster-child inherits in one line and imitates in another. Again, the hold of custom is not identical with the grip of childhood impressions. Among nearly all peoples time has a hallowing power, and whatever is immemorial is by that very fact clothed with prestige. Says MacGahan [1] of the annual migrations of the Kirghiz, a people who roam from the Oxus to the Syr: "To anybody unacquainted with their habits of life, there does not seem to be the slightest system in their movements. They have a system nevertheless. Every tribe and every aul follows year after year exactly the same itinerary, pursuing the same paths, stopping at the same wells as their ancestors did a thousand years ago; and thus many auls whose inhabitants winter together are hundreds of miles apart in the summer. The regularity and exactitude of their movements is such that you can predict to a day where, in a circuit of several hundred miles, any aul will be at any season of the year. A map of the desert show-

[1] "Campaigning on the Oxus," 51.

ing all the routes of the different auls, if it could be made, would present a network of paths meeting, crossing, intersecting each other in every conceivable direction, forming apparently a most inexplicable entanglement and confusion. Yet no aul ever mistakes its own way, or allows another to trespass upon its itinerary. One aul may at any point cross the path of another, but it is not allowed to proceed for any distance upon it. Any deviation of an aul or tribe from the path which their ancestors have trodden is a cause for war."

"I took occasion now to ask my friend why his people did not stay in the same spot, instead of continually wandering from place to place. The pasture, he said, was not sufficient in one place to sustain their flocks and herds. 'But why do those who live on the Syr in the winter not stay there in the summer, where the pasture is good, instead of wandering off into the desert, where it is thin and scarce?' I asked. 'Because other auls come; and if they all stayed, they would soon eat it all bare.' 'But why do not the other auls stay at home on the Amu and the Irghiz, instead of coming?' 'Because other auls come there too,' he replied. 'But why do not they all stay at home?' 'Well, our fathers never did so, and why should not we do as they have always done?' he replied. And I suppose this is about as near the true reason of their migration as any other."

Why the familiar beaten paths are pleasant

There is, finally, the fact that, unlike heredity, the power of custom is purely psychical, and the key to it lies in our mental constitution. When for some time we have been refurnishing our minds and lives, a sudden feeling of self-alienation takes possession of us. We are seized with a vertigo like that which attacks one on the verge of

an abyss or one crawling along an underground passage when the opening narrows and the earth presses upon his shoulders. This spasm of horror, as elemental as the dread of the dark or the loathing of clammy things, inspires a frantic desire to get back to the old, not because it is better than the new, but because only then can we recover ourselves, experience that *at-homeness* which gives inward peace. Here, no doubt, is the explanation of the reaction that usually follows upon a rapid and extensive abandonment of custom. It is the secret of the backsliding of native Christians, the civilized savage's "going Fantee," and the revival of Voodooism in black populations.

Conservative influence of animistic ideas

To this instinctive horror of the totally alien and unfamiliar was added the fear inspired by the animistic beliefs that dominate early man. Jenks[1] shows how reasonable it once was to follow the beaten path.

"One of the strongest characteristics of primitive man is his fear of the Unknown. He is forever dreading that some act of his may bring down upon him the anger of the gods. He may not fear his fellow-man, nor the beasts of the forest; but he lives in perpetual awe of those unseen powers which, from time to time, seem bent on his destruction. He sows his corn at the wrong season; he reaps no harvest, the offended gods have destroyed it all. He ventures up into a mountain, and is caught in a snowdrift. He trusts himself to a raft and is wrecked by a storm. He endeavors to propitiate these terrible powers with sacrifices and ceremonies; but they will not always be appeased. There are terrors above him and around him.

[1] "Law and Politics in the Middle Ages," 56–57.

"From this state of fear, custom is his first great deliverer. . . . What has been done once in safety, may possibly be done again. What has been done many times, is fairly sure to be safe. A new departure is full of dangers; not only to the man who takes it, but to those with whom he lives, for the gods are apt to be indiscriminate in their anger. Custom is the one sure guide to law; custom is that part of law which has been discovered. Hence the reverence of primitive society for custom; hence their terror of the innovator. Custom is the earliest known stage of law; it is not enacted, nor even declared: it establishes itself as the result of experience."

The *pseudo*-scientific sanction of custom

Although animism has passed away, custom still sways men's minds. So long as human beings are so lazy and thinking is so difficult, reasons will never be lacking for attributing the higher value to that which comes to us from the past. We are told to-day that the old has by that very fact given signal proof of vitality. Its survival demonstrates its fitness. This is the argument of the "historical continuity" school, which insists that the presumption is in favor of whatever is borne to us on the current of history. This consideration it was, no doubt, that impelled an English lord chancellor to declare that he was in favor of all established institutions, and in favor of them because they *were* established.

Why the presumption is against the very old

The student of society, on the other hand, realizes that the correct inference is precisely the reverse. Owing to forces over which it has no control society undergoes incessant change. In general, the longer the time elapsed, the greater the amount of change. Other things being equal, a society will have suffered greater transformation at the end of three hundred years than at the end of one

hundred years. Hence, the older an institution, practice, or dogma, the more hopelessly out of adjustment it may be presumed to be. The fitter it was when adopted, the worse misfit to-day. What comes to us from our grandfathers may suit fairly well the situation to-day; but that which spans a dozen generations is little likely to agree with the needs of our time.

Everything fluid in society tends to crystallize

In consequence of the cumulative authority of custom, there is in every department of social life a tendency toward the formation of an *etiquette* marking the ascendency of the dead over the living, and the triumph of conformity over individual preference. To be sure, this tendency may be counteracted or overborne by the presence of factors which create currents of transformation. Nevertheless, the tendency is there, and in the quieter reaches of social life it declares itself unmistakably.

Growth of definiteness in language

Language, once so variable in structure and significance, gets in time its grammar and its dictionary, *i.e.*, the petrifaction of forms and meanings; its orthography, *i.e.*, the crystallization of spelling; its purist, *i.e.*, the linguistic prude who abhors "reliable," "jeopardize," "presidential," and condemns the use of the passive participle "was being built."

Increasing precision in religious ritual

The mode of approach to the divinity, at first a matter of personal discretion, becomes religious ritual, so precise that it has to be handed over to priestly experts. Says Maspero[1] of the Egyptian sacrifice: "The species, hair, and age of the victim, the way in which it was to be brought and bound, the manner and details of its slaughter, the order to be followed in opening its body and cutting it up, were all minutely and unchangeably decreed. And

[1] "Dawn of Civilization," 124–125.

these were but the least of the divine exactions, and those most easily satisfied. The formulas accompanying each act of the sacrificial priest contained a certain number of words whose due sequence and harmonies might not suffer the slightest modification whatever, even from the god himself, under penalty of losing their efficacy. They were always recited with the same rhythm, according to a system of melody in which every tone had its virtue combined with movements which confirmed the sense and worked with irresistible effect: one false note, a single discord between the succession of gestures and the utterance of the sacramental words, any hesitation, any awkwardness in the accomplishment of a rite, and the sacrifice was vain. . . . If man scrupulously observed the innumerable conditions with which the transfer was surrounded, the god could not escape the obligation of fulfilling his petition; but should he omit the least of them, the offering remained with the temple and went to increase the endowments in mortmain, but the god was pledged to nothing in exchange. Hence the officiating priest assumed a formidable responsibility as regarded his fellows."

And in religious dogma

In like manner, the spontaneity of the early Christians gives way in time to differentiated and precise exercises like confessional, mass, Eucharist, and extreme unction. Religious belief, at first extremely individual, combining agreement on a few central doctrines with a great latitude of opinion on all other points, is crystallized into creeds. Comparison of the Apostles', the Nicene and the Athanasian Creeds, the Tridentine Profession of Faith, the Thirty-nine Articles, and the Westminster Confession of Faith shows a short and simple statement of belief replaced by statements ever more full and explicit.

Constitutionalism

In the state, political relations, expressing at first the application of common sense to realities and practical needs, get more and more tied up with legalism. The written constitution becomes a fetish too sacred to criticise or amend; and it can be fitted, if at all, to the changing needs of a highly dynamic society only by some hocus-pocus of "interpretation."

The anchylosis of law

Law stiffens with the accumulation of precedent, or the growing prestige of dead commentators — a Gaius or an Ulpian, a Coke or a Blackstone. Says Amos:[1] "So soon as a system of law becomes reduced to completeness of outward form, it has a natural tendency to crystallize into a rigidity unsuited to the free applications which the actual circumstances of human life demand. The invariable reaction against this stage is manifested in a progressive extension, modification, or complete suspension of the strict legal rule into which the once merely equitable principle has been gradually contracted." Equity itself, at first an attempt to correct the mechanical operation of law by enlarging the sphere of judicial discretion at the expense of technicality, gets bound by precedents, acquires a legal shell, and becomes merely a competing system of law destined in the end to complete absorption.

The petrifaction of procedure

Litigation gets so involved in elaborate procedure that no one dares trust himself to it without the guidance of an expert. A lawsuit, originally a quest for truth and justice, becomes a regulated contest between professionals, to be decided according to the rules of the sport. "The inquiry is not, What do substantive law and justice require? Instead the inquiry is, Have the rules of the

[1] "Science of Law," 57.

game been carried out strictly? If any material infraction is discovered, just as the football rules put back the offending team five or ten yards, as the case may be, our sporting theory of justice awards new trials, or reverses judgments, or sustains demurrers in the interest of regular play."[1]

The apotheosis of red tape

Administration becomes procedure and routine; and those native clerks who were found on their knees in a room in a government building in Calcutta, adoring, after the immemorial manner of the Hindu craftsman, a collection of the tools of their craft — pens, ink, sealing-wax, and red tape — would find co-worshippers of red tape in the departments of every government. Le Bon[2] cites from official reports the case of the French *chef de bataillon* "who, having received permission to have made, at the Invalides, a pair of non-regimental boots, found himself a debtor to the state for the sum of 7 fr. 80, which sum he was perfectly willing to pay. To render this payment regular there were necessary three letters from the Minister of War, one from the Minister of Finances, and fifteen letters, decisions, or reports from generals, directors, chiefs of departments, etc., at the head of the various administrative services!" In the navy "the monthly pay of a simple lieutenant comprises a collection of sixty-five different items, 'all provided with long tails of decimals!' To obtain, in a seaport, a 'sail-maker's palm,' a piece of leather worth a penny, it is necessary to make out a special form, for which one must explore every corner of the port in search of six different signatures. When once

[1] Paper by Professor Roscoe Pound, Transactions of the American Bar Association at its Twenty-ninth Annual Meeting.

[2] "The Psychology of Socialism," 176–177.

the scrap of leather is obtained, new signatures and inscriptions are necessary in other registers. As a receipt for certain articles pieces of accountant's work demanding fourteen days' labor are necessary. The number of reports docketed by certain departments is reckoned at 100,000." On shipboard are found "together with thirty-three volumes of regulations, intended to determine the details of administrative life on board, a list of 230 different types of registers, ledgers, memoranda, weekly and monthly reports, certificates, receipt forms, journals, fly-leaves, etc."

Fighting becomes smothered in military tactics, the army from a national weapon becomes a toy of princelings, the soldiers come to exist for the sake of the parade, and the Archduke Constantine sounds the first note in the "war against war" by voicing the naïve sentiment "I do not like war; it spoils the soldiers, dirties their uniforms, and destroys discipline."

The formalization of instruction

Education comes to consist in traversing a rigid curriculum fixed by conditions long since passed away, or else hardens into a discipline for getting people through certain examinations — the "cram" system. The preference shown the ancient languages in the college curriculum is an anachronism, a heritage from the Renaissance when Greek and Latin were, in very sooth, the great liberal studies. Says Jules Lemaitre of French secondary education: "Our secondary classical instruction remains at root what it was under the old régime." "What does this mean? Everything is altered; the discoveries of applied science have profoundly modified the conditions of life, both for the individual and the nation; have altered even the face of the earth. The universal reign

of industry and commerce has begun; we form a democratic and industrial society, already menaced, or rather half undermined, by the competition of powerful nations, and the children of our *petite bourgeoisie*, and many children of the lower classes, spend eight years in learning — very badly — the things that were formerly taught very well, by the Jesuit Fathers, in a monarchical society, in a France whose supremacy was recognized by Europe, at a period when Latin was an international language, to the sons of the nobles, the magistrates, and the privileged classes."

Ceremoniousness

Respect and friendliness are expressed in forms of politeness which eventuate into the oppressive court ceremonial of Byzantium or China, the elaborate etiquette of the Persians or the Siamese, the punctilious courtesy of the Burmans or the Japanese. In church architecture a certain type — Romanesque, Gothic, Renaissance, Rococo — gets the upper hand and for generations rules with an ever more despotic sway. For literature there springs up a Boileau, a Pope, or an *Academie Française*, trammelling the genius of the artist with precise rules.

The arrest of progress by a cake of custom

In a word, there is in every segment of social life a tendency to form a "cake of custom" which may become so strong that it cannot be broken up from within. This, in Bagehot's opinion, accounts for "the whole family of arrested civilizations. A large part, a very large part, of the world seems to be ready to advance to something good — to have prepared all the means to advance to something good — and then to have stopped, and not advanced. India, Japan, China, almost every sort of Oriental civilization, though differing in nearly all other things, are in this alike. They look as if they had paused

when there was no reason for pausing — when a mere observer from without would say that they were likely not to pause." Even the peoples that do progress suffer terribly from the cake of custom that forms so quickly, yet withal so quietly, and confines them ere they are aware of it.

British immobility

Says Boutmy:[1] "The English people has had to do violence to itself in order to achieve the greater part of that material progress by which it now profits with its customary practical superiority. It began by regarding with contempt, anxiety, and sometimes even horror, the most innocent and useful discoveries: the use of steam, the submarine telegraph, the Suez Canal, and the Universal Exhibition, the postal reform, and the Channel tunnel. With greater reason organic reforms in the government have always been treated as *views* and *dangerous experiments* for quite a long time."

American immobility

Let not Americans hug fondly the delusion that they are free of such trammels. Early in their history they did, indeed, for a time, evince a daring and splendid spirit of innovation. They fitted their institutions to their needs with a success that placed them in the van of progress. But to-day their idolatry of an undemocratic Federal Constitution, their reverence for irresponsible power in the form of an "independent" judiciary[2] and

[1] "The English People," 121.

[2] In England the king's power of summary removal of judges placed the courts under his control, and made it possible for him to use them in oppressing the people. To make them independent of his will an act was passed, in 1701, providing that judges should be removed only on an Address from Parliament to the Crown. English judges have always been answerable to Parliament. Yet the old fight on their behalf resulted in a tradition of "independence" which, for a hundred odd years,

their veneration of a common law at variance with certain needs of an industrial civilization are holding them back. In the march of peoples they must not only yield the banner of leadership to the younger societies of Australasia, but they ought, perhaps, to fall in humbly behind certain little peoples of old Europe — the Norwegians, the Danes, the Swiss. A people that tolerates the trammels that prevent it carrying out its deliberate intention to protect women and children in industry, safeguard the health of workers, regulate the conditions of labor, control corporations, fix railway rates, or operate public utilities must suffer from a growing maladjustment of its laws and policies to its needs. Deference for a traditional system of law which exhibits too great a respect for the individual and too little respect for the needs of society when they come into conflict with the individual, to suit it to the present age, results in the following decisions grounded on "interference with the right of free contract." "Three of them hold eight-hour laws unconstitutional; two more hold statutes limiting the hours of labor unconstitutional; four deny effect to statutes fixing the periods at which certain classes of laborers shall receive their wages; another passes adversely on a statute prohibiting the practice of fines in cotton mills; another deals in the same way with a statute prohibiting corporations from deducting from the wages of employees to establish hospital and relief funds; three overturn acts regulating the measuring of coal for the

The judicial veto on society's efforts to adjust itself to new situations

has been used to justify the American practice of exalting Federal judges, by means of life tenure, into a politically irresponsible body, able with impunity to thwart the will of the people as expressed in laws, by declaring such laws "unconstitutional." See J. A. Smith, "The Spirit of American Government," ch. V.

purpose of fixing the compensation of miners; two hold void statutes designed to prevent the payment of employees in store orders; another passes adversely on an act requiring laborers on public contracts to be paid the prevailing rate of wages; another denies effect to an act requiring railway corporations to furnish discharged employees a statement of the causes of their removal; while another decides it unconstitutional to prevent employers from prohibiting their employees from joining unions or from retaining membership in unions to which they belong."[1]

The judicial denial of other than common law remedies

The same blind deference causes the people to allow the administrative agencies they create for the purpose of inspecting, supervising, regulating, or prosecuting, to be overthrown or shackled[2] in a time when common law methods of protecting the citizen in his rights have failed. Says Professor Pound:[3] "From the beginning the main

[1] Roscoe Pound, "The Spirit of the Common Law," *The Green Bag*, January, 1906.

[2] Says Dr. Smalley: "The gradual growth of the doctrine of judicial review and the gradual development of the methods employed by the courts, have gradually paralyzed the state railroad commissions by destroying their will as well as their power. Under the burden of judicial review, the commissions have become discouraged from the task of rate regulation; most of them pay relatively slight attention to the matter of rates, confining themselves largely to the other and much less important duties imposed upon them. Some have practically desisted from rate-making. Some esteem their duty done when they attempt to arbitrate the few cases between carrier and shipper which are brought to their attention, but which form only a microscopical part of the great question of rates. This relaxation of effort, this growing indifference to the most important of all their functions, has been conspicuous in recent years, and is a discouraging feature of the railroad problem of to-day."—"Railroad Rate Control," 124, Pubs. of the Amer. Econ. Association.

[3] Transactions of the American Bar Association at its Twenty-ninth Annual Meeting.

reliance of our common law system has been individual initiative. The main security for the peace at Common Law is private prosecution of offenders. The chief security for the efficiency and honesty of public officers is mandamus or injunction by a taxpayer to prevent waste of the proceeds of taxation. The reliance for keeping public service companies to their duty in treating all alike at reasonable price is an action to recover damages. Moreover, the individual is supposed at Common Law to be able to look out for himself and to need no administrative protection. If he is injured through contributory negligence, no theory of comparative negligence comes to his relief; if he hires as an employee, he assumes the risk of the employment; if he buys goods, the rule is *caveat emptor*. In our modern industrial society, this whole scheme of individual initiative is breaking down. Private prosecution has become obsolete. Mandamus and injunction have failed to prevent rings and bosses from plundering public funds. Private suits against carriers for damages have proved no preventive of discrimination and extortionate rates. The doctrine of assumption of risk becomes brutal under modern conditions of employment. An action for damages is no comfort to us when we are sold diseased beef or poisonous canned goods. At all these points, and they are points of everyday contact with the most vital public interests, Common Law methods of relief have failed."

Why new societies outstrip all others

This fatal crusting over of social life with the lapse of time is one reason why new societies — if not isolated — are apt to be more progressive and prosperous than old societies. They escape many of the customs and punctilios that stifle initiative and paralyze effort. Here, in-

deed, is the secret of the "Western" spirit. Thus we read:[1] —

The secret of the "hustle" spirit

"This forcefulness of the West is seen in all forms of social life. It is indicated by those modes of business and habits of action so familiarly known as 'hustling.' The Western man is bound to succeed and sticks at no obstacles. A few years since the people of a certain religious denomination in Minnesota began to take measures for the organization of a church in a rising suburb of a great city; but the management was in the hands of an Eastern society, and plans did not at once materialize in deeds. The members of another organization not radically different in creed learned what was contemplated. There was room at the time for not more than one church, and whatever one was the first to start was quite sure to be the leading one when the suburb should become populous. Accordingly, one Sunday afternoon, about two weeks before the proposed meeting for organization under the Eastern society, the members of this other denomination held a quiet meeting on their own account. They then and there perfected a church organization, elected officers, appointed a pastoral committee and a building committee, and adjourned. The next day the building committee bought a lot, and on the following day began the erection of a temporary building. Meanwhile the pastoral committee telegraphed a call to a young clergyman to become their pastor; he accepted, and at once took a train for his new field. On the following Sunday, one week from the time of the original meeting, the completed building was dedicated by the new pastor. The other enterprise was abandoned. The church so rapidly

[1] Judson, in Shaler's "United States of America," II, 311.

put in form has to-day a fine house of worship and a large membership."

SUMMARY

The great rival to conventionality is custom.

The roots of custom imitation start in the association of children with parents.

The hallowing influence of time creates an irresistible presumption of superiority in favor of whatever is old.

A rapid and wide departure from the customary and familiar produces in many a distressing sense of self-alienation.

Much of early man's fear of the unknown and untried was due to his animistic ideas.

The long-established has by that very fact shown itself workable; but there is a strong likelihood that it has lost much of the fitness it once had.

There is a tendency for the transmitted to become even more definite and precise, so that each generation is confined under a thicker and tougher cake of custom.

The bondage of the living to the dead is by no means absent from American society.

The proverbial energy and prosperity of new communities are due largely to escape from the burden of the past.

EXERCISE

1. What are your feelings when you have a sudden realization of having drifted far from the beliefs, ideals, and standards of your youth ?

2. Has acquaintance with the scientific view of life and society altered your feelings in such a case ?

3. Does wider knowledge of the diverse traditions and customs of other peoples make you more cautious and provisional in your attitude toward your own beliefs and practices ?

4. Are ancient precepts about the conduct of life worthier of our confidence than ancient institutions ?

5. What is it chiefly that invalidates ancient religious dogma ?

Ancient teachings regarding the family? Ancient political institutions?

6. Show that, unless it can be easily amended, a written constitution, no matter how perfect, becomes in time an incubus.

7. Show the dangers of creating perpetual endowments for specific and limited charitable uses.

CHAPTER XIII

CONDITIONS AFFECTING THE SWAY OF CUSTOM

Fear of the ghosts of the dead preserves custom

THE blind adherence to custom so pronounced throughout the patriarchal stage of social organization [1] is partly due to fear of the spirits of the deceased forefathers, who naturally would resent and punish any departure from their favorite beliefs or ways. The cult of the dead — *ancestor worship* — is, perhaps, the most conservative type of religion, and much was gained for progress when nature gods were substituted for deified ancestors as objects of worship.

The age of governors and leaders affects the attitude toward the past

What is received becomes fixed by self-imitation (habit), and so becomes more obdurate with advancing years. Hence, other things being equal, society will be conservative or progressive *according as it puts to the fore old men or young men.* The installing of the old in all places of authority and direction as surely brings on social old age as the calcareous deposit in the walls of the arteries brings on an old-age condition of the body.

[1] Says Jenks: "The desperate tenacity with which patriarchal society clung to a practice, merely because it was a practice, is illustrated by the well-known Roman custom of examining the entrails of victims to ascertain the prospects of an expedition. Originally, no doubt, it was a practical expedient adopted by the nomad tribes from which the Romans were descended, in their wanderings through unknown country. To test the fitness for food of the new herbs with which they came into contact, they caused a few of their cattle and sheep to eat them, and then by sort of rude *post-mortem*, judged of the result." — "History of Politics," 41.

In general, it is young men who provide the logic, decision, and enthusiasm necessary to relieve society of the crushing burden that each generation seeks to roll upon the shoulders of the next. The Greeks were right in accepting Hesiod's maxim, "Work for youth, counsel for maturity, prayers for old age." The domination of gray-beards is equivalent to a fatty degeneration of the social brain.[1] The patriarchal constitution of the family is inim-

[1] His first-hand observation of the incompetency of aged English generals in the Boer War prompts Kipling derisively to put into the mouths of the Old Men these words: —

"We shall not acknowledge that old stars fade or alien planets arise
(That the sere bush buds or the desert blooms or the ancient well-head dries),
Or any new compass wherewith new men adventure 'neath new skies.

"We shall lift up the ropes that constrained our youth to bind on our children's hands;
We shall call to the water below the bridges to return and replenish our lands;
We shall harness horses (Death's own pale horses) and scholarly plough the sands.

"We shall lie down in the eye of the sun for lack of a light on our way —
We shall rise up when the day is done and chirrup, 'Behold, it is day!'
We shall abide until the battle is won ere we amble into the fray.

"We shall peck out and discuss and dissect, and evert and extrude to our mind,
The flaccid tissues of long-dead issues offensive to God and mankind —
(Precisely like vultures over an ox that the Army has left behind).

"The Lamp of our Youth will be utterly out: but we shall subsist on the smell of it,
And whatever we do, we shall fold our hands and suck our gums and think well of it.
Yes, we shall be perfectly pleased with our work, and that is the perfectest Hell of it!

ical to the bright ideas of young men, and it was a red-letter day for progress when the lad became his own master the moment he could wield the arms of the warrior. The committing of government first to the elders of the tribe, later to *gerontes* and *senatores*, the very name indicating the graybeard, threw it into a rut from which only warfare, bringing young men to the front, could lift it. In China, when a man gets to be sixty years old he begins to become a leader, and the older he grows, the more he is honored. A Chinaman confesses, "I approached my grandfather with awe, my father and mother with veneration, and my elder brother with respect." Thanks to this *gerontolatry*, the power of government is lodged to a large degree in the hands of the aged. "Only the lower official ranks are usually reached in middle life, and it is not until the best powers of body and mind have begun to weaken that the highest places of honor and responsibility are secured. The confusion in government can often be traced to the palsied hands that are guiding its affairs." [1]

China compared with Revolutionary France

It is not surprising that a society thus guided should become a byword for stupid conservatism. On the other hand, tasks for rapid and wholesale readjustment fall into the hands of young men.[2] At the outbreak of the French Revolution the eleven men who were destined to become its leaders averaged thirty-four years of age!

"This is our lot if we live so long and listen to those who love us —
That we are shunned by the people about and shamed by the Powers above us.
Wherefore be free of your harness betimes; but being free be assured,
That he who hath not endured to the death, from his birth he hath never endured!"

[1] Sheffield, *Forum*, 29, p. 595.

[2] "This constant return to purely logical activity with each generation keeps the world supplied with visionaries and reformers — that is to say,

Old-age conservatism is psychological in origin and may be avoided

It is true that the neophobia of the old has its cause in mental attitude rather than in physical decay. It is not that the mental power is less; but it is natural for a man to rely on the thinking he did in his twenties and to refuse to reopen questions he "settled" half a lifetime ago. This atrophy of thought can be avoided if the danger is foreseen, and a man deliberately forms the habit of breaking thought-habits. It can be escaped if a man recognizes that he is borne on a stream of social change and that, instead of trusting to the perspective in which things appeared to his youth, he must look and look again. Then there are searchers, skilled in the advancement of knowledge, who never conclude their education, who become accustomed to disowning their yesterdays and building on to-morrows, who remain progressive throughout life, and in their riper years, rich in the garnered fruits of experience, they render the greatest services to society.

Old men discredited in such competitive fields as warfare and business

Such splendid specimens are, however, too few to man the high posts, and there is little danger of society dispensing too soon with their services. The danger is all the other way. The aged generals of Frederick the Great cost Prussia dear in the Napoleonic wars, and England paid well for putting "good old Buller" in charge of her South African campaign. A nation is easiest to thrash about a generation after a successful war, when the heroes

with saviours and leaders. New movements are born in young minds, and lack of experience enables youth eternally to recall civilization to sound bases. If each generation started where the last one left off, imagine where Lord Chesterfield's sons would be to-day. The passing generation smiles and cracks its weather-worn jokes about youthful effusions; but this ever new, ever hopeful, ever daring, ever doing youthful enthusiasm, ever returning to the logical bases of religion, ethics, politics, business, art, and social life — this is the salvation of the world." — BARNES, "The Child as a Social Factor," "Studies in Education," 359.

of that war, having become old, and wise in their own conceit, have gone to sleep on their laurels. It is well, therefore, that our government permits the retirement of an army officer at sixty-two and requires it at sixty-four.[1] The instituting of pension funds for college professors will, no doubt, promote efficiency by permitting the timely retirement of those teachers who have not mastered the difficult art of self-renewal. In the sphere of industrial management Americans are as impatient with old men as were the Athenians of Pericles with old men in public affairs.[2]

[1] Our navy, on the other hand, is in the hands of the old. In his message on this subject on December 17, 1906, President Roosevelt says: "Under the present archaic system of promotion, without parallel in the navy of any other first-class power, captains are commissioned at the average age of fifty-six, and rear-admirals at the average age of sixty. The following table gives the age of the youngest captains and flag-officers, with the average years in grade, in the navies of Great Britain, France, Germany, Japan, and the United States.

	Captains		Sea-going Flag-officers	
	Age	Average years in grade	Age	Average years in grade
"Great Britain	35	11.2	45	8.0
France	47	9.5	53	14.2
Germany	42	6.2	51	6.0
Japan	38	8.0	44	11.0
United States	55	4.5	59	1.5"

[2] "One prominent feature in the administration of American works, and perhaps especially so of steel, iron, and engineering works, is the large number of young men who are to be found in positions of authority. This is founded upon one of the aphorisms of American enterprise — that a young man's intuitions are more effective than an old man's experience. As an example of the comparative youthfulness of the men who are charged with responsible positions, I probably could hardly cite a more striking case than that of the Pressed Steel Car Company at Pittsburg — a concern that employs about 10,000 hands at four works of unusual magnitude. In this case I ascertained that the founder

Old men as custodians of religion and of law

Where continuity is precious, where it is a matter of keeping pure for all time "the faith which was once delivered unto the saints," old men are properly kept in charge. This is why popes, cardinals, bishops, and rabbis are appointed old and hold for life. This is why, at the last pontifical election, the great cardinal who guided the policy of Leo XIII was adjudged "too young" at sixty, and was reserved for the *next* vacancy that should occur in the chair of St. Peter. If "all principles, both of law and of equity, have long since been declared and are to be found in the adjudged cases," if a system of law is "the perfection of reason" and good for all time, then law should be passed down the generations through the hands of old men. Judges should hold for life, and it should be a matter of no uneasiness that the justices of the Supreme Court of the United States average 65.5 years, and are separated by an interval of 43 years from the completion of their formal legal education; that the circuit judges average 57.5 years, and are 36.5 years from their preliminary legal studies; that the judges of the highest state courts are near 56 years, and for them the interval is 32.5 years. If, on the other hand, ours is not a static, but a highly dynamic, society, and the rapid and sweeping transformations that occur in the spheres of industry, transportation, business organization, and urban life call for correlated changes in law and administration, then the wisdom of hinging all this adaptive development [1] on the

is fifty-six years; the president, thirty-eight years; his assistant, thirty-six years; the chief engineer, thirty-two years, the consulting engineer, forty-two years; and the secretary, thirty-six years of age." — JEANS, "American Industrial Conditions and Competition," 79–80."

[1] Professor Henry C. Adams, in an address on "Economics and Jurisprudence," read before the American Economic Association in 1897,

consent of life judges steeped in the older legal philosophy, is open to question.

What judicial immobility costs society

Commenting on the question, "How can the gradual, cumulative effect of working conditions, and of living conditions, upon the public health, be made obvious to the minds of the judges composing the courts of last resort?" Professor Henderson says:[1] "So long as young lawyers are told by the highest and worthiest of their teachers that 'the law library is the laboratory of the student,' what can we expect afterward? Every beneficent change in legislation comes from a fresh study of social conditions and of social ends, and from some rejection of obsolete law to make room for a rule which fits the new facts. One can hardly escape from the conclusion that a lawyer who has not studied economics and sociology is very apt to become a public enemy; and many a good judge would be hurtful if he did not get through newspapers and magazines a diluted kind of sociology which saves him from bondage to mere precedent. Reformation does not come from a law library, which has its useful function in conservatism; it comes from a complete mastery of the real world, and a moral judgment as to what ought to be and is not yet. . . . Without this study of sociology and economics we may have acute interpreters of legal phraseology, shrewd money-getters, advisers of corporations; but

says: "Every change in the social structure, every modification of the principle of political or industrial association, as well as the acceptance of a new social ideal, must be accompanied by a corresponding change in those rights and duties acknowledged and enforced by law. Should this development in jurisprudence be arrested or pursued sluggishly, as compared with that of some particular phase of associated action, serious mischief will inevitably follow."

[1] *American Journal of Sociology*, XI, 847.

we cannot have the best type of leaders of social progress. The legal profession has already rendered service which we gladly recognize and honor; but, on the other hand, many of its best trained men, lacking the vision for the principle that 'new occasions teach new duties,' obstruct the way with barricades of dead precedents."

The hypertrophy of structure arrests the progress of society

Government, owing to the fact that it is a form of organization, is conservative; and hence *preponderance of imperative occasions for coöperation over optional occasions* engenders coercive forms of coöperation, magnifies the rôle of government in social life, cramps individual initiative, dwarfs individuality, and finally arrests development. The great irrigating, river-basin societies — Egypt, Babylonia, India, China — in consequence of the need of authoritative levee-building and systematic regulation of the waters, developed government to such a degree that they became stalled by these massive structures.[1] Overmuch coöperation in fighting tends in the same direction. On the other hand, little societies like the Greek city-states, established in small valleys with natural defences, opening seaward, leave individuality free and foster progress.

Geographical barriers may shut out stimuli to change

Physical isolation favors the sway of custom. In the "valley closets" of mountain regions the old endures long after the plains and the seaboard populations have discarded it. In the Pyrenees are encysted the little mediæval Republic of Andorra and the Basques with their queer agglutinative language. Auvergne and Savoy, the highlands of France, are little penetrated by scepticism,

[1] See Buckle, "History of Civilization in England," ch. V, for the obstructive working of authoritative government — as distinguished from the ministering type of government that here and there is appearing.

divorce, suicide, liberalism, and the other characteristic features of the modern social type. Hidden away in the mountain areas are found persisting social forms which mark out the forgotten trail by which the culture peoples climbed to their present height. The Russian sociologist Kovalewsky owed much of his success in reconstructing early social conditions to the revelations of the primitive societies sealed up in the Caucasus, while Westermarck was enabled by his studies on the people of the Great Atlas to make rich contributions to social embryology. The literary artist in search of local color goes to the Carpathians or the Balkans. The people of the Appalachians, one of the largest horseback areas left in all the world, with their hospitality and feuds, their spinning-wheels and hand-looms, their "hard-shell" predestinarianism and their retention of old words like "holp" and "drug" and "gorm" and "feisty," resemble their colonial forebears more than any other Americans.[1]

Mountains preserve old life

Says Mahaffy:[2] "This clear and bold, though perhaps narrow, view of justification by faith alone, the sudden passage from darkness to light, the exclusion of all attempts at virtue outside the pale of this conviction, — all has been inherited by the modern Protestant from the ancient Stoic far more directly than most men imagine. We can trace it historically, with but few gaps in the obscurity of the Middle Ages from the rugged mountains of Cilicia, the original home of Stoicism, to the equally rugged land of the Scotch Covenanters. Among the bold mountaineers

[1] From the daily speech of the Kentucky mountaineers Professor W. I. Thomas gathered a list of three hundred words obsolete since about the sixteenth century or surviving only in the dialects of England.

[2] "The Progress of Hellenism in Alexander's Empire," 144–145.

of Cilicia, celebrated in their heathen days for facing death instead of slavery, where whole city populations committed suicide when pressed by Persian, by Greek, by Roman besiegers, this congenial doctrine found its home, till from Isauria, the wildest part of these highlands, came the Emperor Leo to sit on the Byzantine throne and open his crusade against images. It was this Protestant or Stoic spirit that dictated the whole iconoclastic war, and when the adherents of this dynasty were driven out, they took refuge in Wallachia and Moldavia, whence they passed, or their spirit passed, into Moravia and Bohemia, where in due time arose John Huss and Jerome of Prague; and from these early reformers Protestantism spread to Germany, England, Scotland, and thence with the Pilgrim Fathers to North America — all the spirit of Stoicism, so strong in Paul, and so strong in the Scotch Calvinists, that it is difficult to find any closer spiritual relationship asserting itself over diversities of race and language across wide gulfs of space and time."

Backwardness of out-of-the-way islands

Islands, if they are off the beaten tracks, tend to be traditional in spirit. The Isle of Man is famous for the old-time flavor of its institutions and customs. In the interior of Sardinia the traveller can reckon on a hospitality that reminds one of the *Odyssey*. In Corsica blood feud is still so flourishing that France is said to hang the walls of her schoolrooms there with admonitory texts like "Thou shalt not kill."

Why the back country is old-fashioned

In general, the *country* has few contacts with the outside, and is therefore conservative. Here old fashions, greetings, ballads, locutions, superstitions, and prejudices find their asylum. In the back country survive clannishness, the sacrament theory of marriage, full quivers,

marital supremacy, patriarchal authority, snuff-dipping, herb doctors, self-supporting preachers, foot-washing, hell-fire doctrine, controversy on the form of baptism, dread of witchcraft, and belief in the flatness of the earth. Where tradition holds, the institutions of control are effective, and hence rural communities are usually quiet and orderly. But some of their members object to canned life. Mrs. Grundy stifles individuality, and so the rebels break for the city where they will not meet at every turn the query, "What will people say?" Here some, missing the wholesome inherited restraints, sink into vice and crime, while others, on escaping from the cave of ancestral custom, burst into intellectual bloom and help to make city life a fever of progress. The variety of occupations, interests, and opinions in the urban group produces a spiritual fermentation which results in a broader, freer judgment and an appreciation of new thoughts, manners, and ideals. Compare the provincialism and conservatism of the South — essentially rural — with the temper of the more urban North. Compare Russia (rural) with Germany (urban).

Effect of better means of communication

The introduction of improved communication undermines the sway of custom in case it depends on physical isolation. When the first railroads were run through the backward provinces of France, the new visibly percolated outward from the railroad as water seeps from an irrigation canal and forms a green strip in the desert. The clan system of the Highlands was doomed when in 1745–1746 General Wade built his military road into their heart. The railroads penetrating the rougher parts of Mexico set the hand three centuries forward on the dial.

Linguistic isolation favors the old. Difference of speech offers a serious barrier to mental contact and inflow of

A local dialect shuts out new ideas

new ideas. A dialect, or *patois*, — such as Basque, Breton, Manx, Welsh, Cornish, Gaelic, Erse, Canadian French, Pennsylvania Dutch, Yiddish, — is virtually an amber matrix preserving intact the manners and beliefs of a former time. It was responsible in part for the superstitiousness and feudal loyalty that made La Vendee the open sore of revolutionary France. By means of common schools to replace such a tongue with one of the great national languages is like substituting an irrigation ditch for natural seepage, and is necessary if nationalism is to triumph over provincialism.

Clannishness produces conservatism

Social isolation, by hindering contact with contemporaries, makes closer the contact with the past. The Jews, for ages penned up in the Ghetto and barred from full civil and social equality, came to be obstinately traditional. Confined behind the walls of the Jewry, forbidden to own an estate or practise a profession or intermarry with Christians, they kept alive a jealous, exclusive, tribal spirit, foreign altogether to the demotic character of modern society. As if Canon Law and Civil Law had not done enough, the Jews maintained between themselves and the Christians a hedge of their own, viz., their religious and ceremonial observances. The practice of their rites obliged them to live in closest contact with one another and to shun the uncircumcised. They might not eat the same food as the Christians, or food prepared in the same way. Regulated in the minutest details of life by the six hundred and thirteen commandments binding on the orthodox Jew, they were obliged to keep aloof from the Gentiles, with the result that they became in the last degree clannish and conservative. Their feast-days and fast-days commemorate the ancient joys and sorrows of

Israel, and, after eighteen hundred years, the Synagogue still bewails the fall of the Temple.

"Guest-friendship" makes for advancement

Conversely, an institution like the "guest-friendship" of the Homeric Greeks can do much to avert the cramping effects of isolation. Says Keller:[1] "The Greeks were an 'active' race; with them inertia before a possibility of advance was at a minimum. Minds were alive and elastic, eager and curious concerning external happenings, and bent upon an enthusiastic pursuit of material welfare. In all the phases of Greek life are found evidences of this receptivity of mind and eagerness for advance, impulses which work powerfully toward the decay of syngenetic feelings and customs, and toward the evolution of amalgamation and nationalization. Toward this end one of the chief contributors is a body of traditions and usages connected with strangers, suppliants, guests, and guest-friends. Since the stranger became at once a guest, and since the guest was forever afterward a guest-friend, this body of ideas and practices is appropriately called guest-friendship." After describing the unlimited hospitality and courtesy shown to the chance stranger, Keller goes on to say:[2] "The presence of the religious sanctions in such number and strength indicates that the birth of the host-guest relation took place in the more or less remote past; this is witnessed to also by the completeness of the relation's development. Apparently the origins of guest-friendship lay in the reachings-forth of a developing people toward an advance and toward a further and larger acquaintance with a world of greater material wealth and luxury than their own." "The people were eager to learn, and men were their only

[1] "Homeric Society," 299. [2] *Ibid.*, 303.

books; a stranger, who, if he were not himself a Phœnician, could yet describe the wonders of those magical foreign lands, was a rare treasure to an isolated community. People came to be very fond of entertaining, and gladly accommodated another man's guest in his absence. One man is mentioned who had a house on the public road and entertained every one who came." "In time the real practical value of the relation became more and more apparent, and Zeus became the guardian of strangers, who were the heralds of the time's advance. Eagerness for news, for tales of the exterior world, its people and doings, is marked; it is characteristic of an energetic, isolated community." Guest-friendship seems to have taken its origin "from a period several centuries earlier than the Homeric age, and to have been due chiefly to the quickening contact with an older and more polished civilization."

The home not an adequate sphere of stimulus

House life, by secluding inmates from one another and from the outside world, favors custom imitation. Women are most narrow-minded and traditional where the *harem* or *zenana* prevails. The marked conservatism of even latter-day woman in respect to religion, education, and ethics — her foolish clinging to superannuated race and class prejudices — is due to the restricting of thought-provoking intercourse by the immuring walls of the home. In the Balkans men's costumes became Orientalized by contact with the Turks, whereas the women, secluded at home, preserved the old national costumes of pre-Turkish days.[1] The kitchen, lying within woman's jurisdiction, is confessedly primitive, far less transformed by mechanical inventions than the workshop. In South Europe a pot

[1] Evans, "Through Bosnia and the Herzegovina," 15, 16.

or cruse from the kitchen is more likely to resemble some classic pattern than a tool from the artisan's bench.[1] The household crockery and pottery of the Danubian peoples show a similarity of pattern that recalls their unity under the vanished Eastern Empire, whereas the field implements show no such fidelity to the past.

Reading gives more fellow-men access to one's mind

Literacy is adverse to custom imitation because, on the whole, books and newspapers create contacts with the present rather than with the past. Oral tradition overleaps time, books both time and space. Most of what the illiterate receive orally — lays, ballads, legends, myths, and proverbs — is *handed down* and consequently cuts a channel between past and present, but not between people and people. Therefore diffusion of the ability to read makes, on the whole, for progress, though, to be sure, the staple of reading may come to be an ancient sacred literature. To-day, at least, the power to read opens a door to the newspaper, which is the natural enemy of tradition, because it is bound to emphasize the new and to exaggerate the momentousness of the present.

The school may be instrument either of progress or tradition

School education is in our day a mighty engine of progress. The teacher has a wider outlook and a freer mind than the average parent, so that the school, provided it appropriates promptly the fruits of contemporary thought and research, is an emancipator. It delivers the young from ignorant parental prejudices, and counteracts oral tradition by injecting into the mind up-to-date knowledge. Nevertheless, if the basis of instruction be the ancient writings — Talmud, Koran, Vedas, Chinese Classics — the school may foster a traditionalism far more cramping and inveterate than the naïve traditionalism of the unlettered.

[1] *Ibid.*, 17, 18.

The contents of its curriculum make the Chinese school the instiller of the most impregnable conservatism that has been encountered by the Western culture.

Says Sheffield:[1] "The scholars of any city in China could now rewrite the leading classics from memory. Not only are Confucian scholars saturated with these writings, but the more striking sayings have passed down into the common speech, so that those who are 'blind with their eyes open' (the uneducated) are constantly quoting them without thought of their origin. The common speech is loaded with proverbs that reflect the thoughts of the Ancients. Scholars, competing for honors, must present in their essays the traditional interpretation of the doctrines of the Sages. If they should presume to set forth views of their own, not in harmony with this interpretation, they would be stripped by the public examiner of honors already conferred, and would be excluded from competing for literary distinction. Thus the educational system of China has not served to lead men's minds into new lines of thought or into fresh fields of investigation; rather has it served to confine the thoughts of each generation of scholars within the limits of 'ancient instruction,' and to stifle independent thought and inquiry."

Universities as citadels of dead learning

The record of Oxford, Louvain, and Pisa as enemies of science and modern thought[2] makes one wonder if there is any conservatism so rooted and fanatical as that which springs from a certain type of university. The traits of this type are brought out by Bryce[3] in commenting on the

[1] *Forum*, 29, p. 593.

[2] White, "History of the Warfare between Science and Theology," I, 128, 133, 149, 387–389, 406; II, 335–337.

[3] "Studies in History and Jurisprudence," II, 231–233.

resemblance between the mediæval universities and El Azhar, the great Mohammedan university of to-day.

"In both, a narrow circle of subjects and practically no choice of curriculum. El Azhar teaches even fewer branches than did Oxford or Bologna in the thirteenth century, for in Mussulman countries the Koran has swallowed up other topics more than theology, queen of the sciences, and the study of the Civil and Canon Laws did in Europe." "Finally, in both, a kind of teaching and study which tends to the development of two aptitudes to the neglect of all others, viz., memory and dialectic ingenuity. The first business of the student is to know his text-book, if necessary to know every word of it, together with the different interpretations every obscure text may bear. His next is to be prepared to sustain by quick, keen argument and subtle distinction either side of any controverted question which may be proposed for discussion. As the habit of knowing text-books thoroughly — and the knowledge of Aristotle and the Corpus Juris possessed by mediæval logicians and lawyers was wonderfully exact and minute — made men deferential to authority and tradition, so the constant practice in oral dialectical discussion made men quick, keen, fertile, and adroit in argument. The combination of brilliant acuteness in handling points not yet settled, with unquestioning acceptance of principles and maxims determined by authority, is characteristic of Muhammadan Universities even more than it was of European ones in the Middle Ages, and tended in both to turn men away from the examination of premises and to cast the blight of barrenness upon the extraordinary inventiveness and acuteness which the habit of casuistical discussion developed."

Freedom of discussion breaks the ancestral spell. On this there is nothing equal to the classic passage from Bagehot.[1]

Open discussion dissolves the bonds of custom

"A government by discussion, if it can be borne, at once breaks down the yoke of fixed custom. The idea of the two is inconsistent. As far as it goes, the mere putting up of a subject to discussion, with the object of being guided by that discussion, is a clear admission that that subject is in no degree settled by established rule, and that men are free to choose in it. It is an admission, too, that there is no sacred authority, — no one transcendent and divinely appointed man whom in that matter the community is bound to obey. And if a single subject or group of subjects be once admitted to discussion, erelong the habit of discussion comes to be established, the sacred charm of use and wont to be dissolved. 'Democracy,' it has been said in modern times, 'is like the grave; it takes, but it does not give.' The same is true of 'discussion.' Once effectually submit a subject to that ordeal, and you can never withdraw it again; you can never again clothe it with mystery, or fence it by consecration; it remains forever open to free choice, and exposed to profane deliberation.

"The only subjects which can be first submitted, or which till a very late age of civilization can be submitted to discussion in the community, are the questions involving the visible and pressing interests of the community; they are political questions of high and urgent import. If a nation has in any considerable degree gained the habit, and exhibited the capacity, to discuss these questions with freedom, and to decide them with discretion, to argue

[1] "Physics and Politics," 161–164.

much on politics and not to argue ruinously, an enormous advance in other kinds of civilization may confidently be predicted for it. And the reason is a plain deduction from the principles which we have found to guide early civilization. The first prehistoric men were passionate savages, with the greatest difficulty coerced into order and compressed into a state. For ages were spent in beginning that order and founding that state; the only sufficient and effectual agent in so doing was consecrated custom; but then that custom gathered over everything, arrested all onward progress, and stayed the originality of mankind. If, therefore, a nation is able to gain the benefit of custom without the evil, — if after ages of waiting it can have order and choice together, — at once the fatal clog is removed, and the ordinary springs of progress, as in a modern community we conceive them, begin their elastic action.

Discussion brings forward the analytic mind

"Discussion, too, has incentives to progress peculiar to itself. It gives a premium to intelligence. To set out the arguments required to determine political action with such force and effect that they really should determine it, is a high and great exertion of intellect. Of course, all such arguments are produced under conditions; the argument abstractedly best is not necessarily the winning argument. Political discussion must move those who have to act; it must be framed in the ideas, and be consonant with the precedent, of its time, just as it must speak its language. But within these marked conditions good discussion is better than bad; no people can bear a government of discussion for a day, which does not, within the boundaries of its prejudices and its ideas, prefer good reasoning to bad reasoning, sound argument to unsound.

A prize for argumentative mind is given in free states, to which no other states have anything to compare.

Discussion teaches tolerance

"Tolerance, too, is learned in discussion, and, as history shows, is only so learned. In all customary societies bigotry is the ruling principle. In rude places to this day any one who says anything new is looked on with suspicion, and is persecuted by opinion if not injured by penalty. One of the greatest pains to human nature is the pain of a new idea. It is, as common people say, so 'upsetting'; it makes you think that, after all, your favorite notions may be wrong, your firmest beliefs ill founded; it is certain that till now there was no place allotted in your mind to the new and startling inhabitant, and now that it has conquered an entrance, you do not at once see which of your old ideas it will or will not turn out, with which of them it can be reconciled, and with which it is at essential enmity. Naturally, therefore, common men hate a new idea, and are disposed more or less to ill-treat the original man who brings it. Even nations with long habits of discussion are intolerant enough. In England, where there is on the whole probably a freer discussion of a greater number of subjects than ever was before in the world, we know how much power bigotry retains. But discussion, to be successful, requires tolerance. It fails wherever, as in a French political assembly, any one who hears anything which he dislikes tries to howl it down. If we know that a nation is capable of enduring continuous discussion, we know that it is capable of practising with equanimity continuous tolerance.

"The power of a government by discussion as an instrument of elevation plainly depends — other things being equal — on the greatness or littleness of the things to be

discussed. There are periods when great ideas are 'in the air,' and when, from some cause or other, even common persons seem to partake of an unusual elevation. The age of Elizabeth in England was conspicuously such a time. The new idea of the Reformation in religion, and the enlargement of the *mœnia mundi* by the discovery of new and singular lands, taken together, gave an impulse to thought which few, if any, ages can equal. The discussion, though not wholly free, was yet far freer than in the average of ages and countries. Accordingly every pursuit seemed to start forward. Poetry, science, and architecture, different as they are, and removed as they all are at first sight from such an influence as discussion, were suddenly started onward. Macaulay would have said you might rightly read the power of discussion 'in the poetry of Shakespeare, in the prose of Bacon, in the oriels of Longleat, and the stately pinnacles of Burleigh.' This is, in truth, but another case of the principle of which I have had occasion to say so much as to the character of ages and countries. If any particular power is much prized in an age, those possessed of that power will be imitated; those deficient in that power will be despised. In consequence an unusual quantity of that power will be developed, and be conspicuous. Within certain limits vigorous and elevated thought was respected in Elizabeth's time, and, therefore, vigorous and elevated thinkers were many; and the effect went far beyond the cause. It penetrated into physical science, for which very few men cared; and it began a reform in philosophy to which almost all were then opposed. In a word, the temper of the age encouraged originality, and in consequence original men started into prominence, went hither and thither

The free discussion of great questions produces an epoch of progress

where they liked, arrived at goals which the age never expected, and so made it ever memorable.

"In this manner, all the great movements of thought in ancient and modern times have been nearly connected in time with government by discussion. Athens, Rome, the Italian republics of the Middle Ages, the communes and states-general of feudal Europe, have all had a special and peculiar quickening influence, which they owed to their freedom, and which states without that freedom have never communicated. And it has been at the time of great epochs of thought — at the Peloponnesian War, at the fall of the Roman Republic, at the Reformation, at the French Revolution — that such liberty of speaking and thinking have produced their full effect."

A sacred book is obstructive, particularly if it is the product of a single mind

Society rusts on its bearings when it acknowledges *the supremacy of an ancient sacred book*, particularly a book that grasps the believer on all sides of his life. All worship of an intellectual product from a remote past shuts out contemporary influences; but never is the mind so sealed up as when the object of reverence is a single writing rather than a body of literature, like the Bible or the Sacred Books of India. The latter, being the outcome of diverse experiences, epochs, and points of view, gives some room for judgment and choice, whereas the former, being offspring of a single mind, cramps. Says Bryce:[1] "The Koran, being taken as an unchangeable and unerring rule of life and thought in all departments, has enslaved men's minds. Even the divergence of different lines of tradition and the varieties of interpretation of its text or of its traditions has given no such opening for a stimulative diversity of comment and speculation as the Christian

[1] "Studies in History and Jurisprudence," II, 235.

standards, both the Scriptures themselves, the product of different ages and minds, and the writings of the Fathers, secured for Christian theology."

A historical group-consciousness fosters traditionalism

Strong group or race feeling limits intercourse with contemporaries and directs the gaze backward. Such feeling may have its origin in religious hatred. Think of the clannishness, and therewith traditionalism, of the Jews, the Copts, the Druses of Lebanon, the Parsees, the French Protestants, the Irish Presbyterians, the English Catholics! Or, tradition may be cherished as the badge of a crushed but still living nationality. A people no longer independent, striving to keep itself distinct and united in the midst of another people (Czechs, Bulgars, Poles, Serbs, Georgians), naturally makes the literature and history of the distant epoch when it was independent and glorious, the focus of its attention, the pith of its instruction.[1] If it

[1] "Whoever has lived among these Transylvanian Saxons, and has taken the trouble to study them, must have remarked that not only seven centuries' residence in a strange land and in the midst of antagonistic races has made them lose none of their identity, but that they are, so to say, *plus catholiques que le pape* — that is, more thoroughly Teutonic than the Germans living to-day in the original fatherland. And it is just because of the adverse circumstances in which they were placed, and of the opposition and attacks which met them on all sides, that they have kept themselves so conservatively unchanged. Feeling that every step in another direction was a step towards the enemy, finding that every concession they made threatened to become the link of a captive's chain, no wonder they clung stubbornly, tenaciously, blindly to each peculiarity of language, dress, and custom in a manner which has probably not got its parallel in history. Left on their native soil and surrounded by friends and countrymen, they would undoubtedly have changed as other nations have changed. Their isolated position and the peculiar circumstances of their surroundings have kept them what they were. Such as these Saxons wandered forth from the far west to seek a home in a strange land, such we find them again to-day, seven centuries later, like a corpse frozen in a glacier which comes to light unchanged after a long lapse of years." — GERARD, "The Land beyond the Forest," 31.

has a religion of its own, it clings to it with a zeal all the more desperate because it is all that patriotism has to cling to. It is not surprising that the Armenian Church, although dominated by the lay element, is in point of doctrine and ritual "extremely conservative."

No inter-assimilation among custom-bound peoples

Indeed, aside from color difference, there is nothing like custom imitation to keep race currents distinct and to delay ethnic assimilation. Eastern Europe and the Orient is a crazy-quilt of diverse races and nationalities that evince no tendency to amalgamate, because they are all under the sceptre of custom. Bryce[1] calls Tiflis a "strange mixture of many races, tongues, religions, and customs. Its character lies in the fact that it has no one character, but ever so many different ones. Here all these people live side by side, buying and selling and working for hire, yet never coming into any closer union, remaining indifferent to one another, with neither love nor hate, nor ambition, peaceably obeying a government of strangers — and held together by no bond but its existence. Of national life or municipal life there is not the first faint glimmering." Of Transcaucasia he says:[2] "Each race, Georgians, Armenians, Tatars, Persians, Lesghians, Mingrelians, Germans, Russians, is too weak numerically to absorb the rest, and too distinct in religion and habits to blend on equal terms with any of the others. This is a phenomenon that constantly meets one in Eastern countries, being not only a consequence, but a cause, of their unprogressiveness."

The coercive *vs.* the attractive method of assimilation

The attempt (1881–1904) of the reactionary Russifying statesmen, Pobyedonostseff, Ignatieff, and Katkoff, to crush into uniformity the heterogeneous national elements

[1] "Transcaucasia and Ararat," 167–168. [2] *Ibid.*, 414.

incorporated into the Russian Empire by driving over them Russian Orthodoxy and Czardom like an enormous steam roller, was bound to fail because it sought to substitute one tradition for another. Men will be boiled in oil before they allow another to clamp his traditions upon them. The scientific policy of assimilation aims to dissolve the traditionalism in which the alien elements in a national population are imprisoned by getting them to vibrate in a new plane, to imitate contemporaries rather than forefathers. There are five features of Americanism which have given the United States a greater solvent power than has been shown by any other nation, ancient or modern.

Our way with the immigrant "Do as you please!"

1. *Toleration.* — Coercion, unless crushing, arouses resentment and race self-assertion. Russia's persecution of the Jews interrupted the processes of spontaneous Russification, refilled the neglected synagogues, restored the influence of the rabbis, and revived the decaying tribal spirit. Dynamite can tear out the ice gorge that chokes the stream of progress, but toleration is the June air that will melt it. There is the old fable of the north wind and the sun vying to see which could strip the traveller of his cloak. The wind tugged at it, but the wilder the blast, the tighter the traveller's grasp. Then the sun came out and *beamed* till he was glad to throw off his cloak. The point is that we cannot combine coercive assimilation with spontaneous assimilation. If we *made* our emigrants follow American ways, they would cease to Americanize themselves.

"Be a man!"

2. *Individualism.* — To Josef or Pietro our democracy says, "Stand up like a man!" His fellow-workmen tell him, "Be your own boss!" Our nipping and eager air

braces the immigrants to defy the commands of priest, rabbi, and *padrone*, the natural upholders of tradition. After four years of it the Lithuanian is bold enough to declare: "When my baby grows up I will not send him to the Lithuanian school. They have only two bad rooms and two priests who teach only from Lithuanian prayer-books. I will send him to the American school which is very big and good." [1]

"Look ahead!"

3. *The Cult of Progress.* — The custom-bound immigrant finds himself among people who ridicule the "good old times" and have no reverence for antiquity. He is asked in irony if he wishes to go back to the flail, the sickle, the tallow dip, and the spinning-wheel. He is taught that not only nearly everything that makes him safe and comfortable is of recent origin, but that whatever is will some day be surpassed. We bid him look ahead, not back. Thus we bring the newcomers into sympathy with ourselves and with one another by turning their eyes from their different national pasts to one spot on the horizon — the Dawn.[2] We cannot interest them in our past; we *can* interest them in our future.

"Vote your sentiments!"

4. *Conferring of Political Rights.* — Liberality in bestowing the franchise, though it has diluted the electorate, has set in motion Americanizing forces. Not only is the naturalized foreigner the object of much party attention and effort, but the exercise of the law-making power with the knowledge it demands, the interest it excites, and the responsibility it involves, tends to bring men of different nationalities into harmonious unity.

[1] Holt, "Undistinguished Americans," 31.

[2] "Neither race nor tradition, nor yet the actual past binds the American to his countrymen, but rather the future which together they are building." — MÜNSTERBERG, "The Americans," 5.

5. *Education.* — On one point only is America inflexible. "Dress as you please, speak as you please, worship as you please, but you *must* let us teach your children." Our insistence on this does not antagonize the stranger, while the moulding influences that can be brought to bear in the school not only detach the young from the parental traditions, but actually inspire them to become accomplices in the Americanizing of their parents.

"Let us teach your children!"

Sedentariness allows social life to fall into ruts. Long residence in a given physical environment means sameness of surroundings, interests, occupation, neighbors, manner of life. Let a group of pioneers or miners or immigrants settle down in a locality, and in the course of two or three generations, provided there is dearth of stimulating culture contacts, an invisible confining net of tradition spreads over the community as moss covers the undisturbed log or a green mantle forms over stagnant water. Migration, on the other hand, often requires change of dress, diet, style of dwelling, domestic animals, occupation, crops, method of tillage, etc., in deference to a climate, soil, mineral wealth, commercial situation, or population density, quite different from that to which the migrant is accustomed. Such imperative adjustments may shatter the habit of following ancestral precedent and pave the way to a general open-mindedness. This is one reason why those who remove to new countries or to cities show such extraordinary energy and progressiveness. They no longer drag the ball-and-chain of the past. This explains why new countries and colonies are such daring path-breakers in law and government,[1] and by

Contrast of the sedentary and the migrant

[1] The spirit that prevails when men from different communities come together to found a new commonwealth is expressed by Walker: "Scarce

their example encourage older societies to free themselves.

Fertilizing contact with other societies necessary for continued progress

A *lack of culture contacts* may permit a society to fall asleep in its tracks. Says Bryce,[1] in accounting for the arrested development of the Mohammedan peoples: "The philosophy, theology, and law of Islam have been less affected by external influences than were those of Christian Europe. Greek literature, though a few treatises were translated and studied by some great

one of these men present at this new founding but had suffered from some law or custom. One man, perhaps through the leaving out of a portion of the rigmarole which in older states the law makes compulsory in a conveyance of real property, had lost his farm and home. When it came to the question of conveying real estate in this new country, he declared that the form must be of the simplest character, something that an honest man could draw himself, if need be, something that would render the legal exactions of the older states impossible. Another man, who, in searching up a title where half a dozen or more courts of record serve to confuse the unwary purchaser, had neglected one of these and so overlooked an important flaw, declared that he wanted but one place of record for all transactions, so that the least intelligent citizen going there and finding nothing against the property he contemplated buying would know, without the costly intervention of an expert, the justice of his title.

"Another, who had seen in some Southern state the laws framed to prevent the collection of mortgages, in the interest of those who are already debtors, and the consequent shutting out of that section from the money markets of the world, declared that he must have a law so clear and explicit in its construction that, if it should become necessary for him to borrow money with which to make improvements, the loaner would have no question to consider other than the value of the securities involved. Still another, who had seen the injustice perpetrated through the inability of married women to hold separate estate, claimed a position for her in this new government of equality with man in the ownership of property, thereby simplifying the legal relations of the sexes and doing away with the complicated wife's dower. The men present from all these states and territories stood each ready to see that the most modern ideas advanced in his own section should be incorporated into the constitution and laws of the new state." — *Cosmopolitan*, 9, p. 63.

[1] "Studies in History and Jurisprudence," II, 235.

thinkers, told with no such power upon the general movement of Mussulman thought as it did in Europe, and notably in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries; and Greek influence among Muslims, instead of growing, seems to have passed away." "There has been in the Mussulman world an absence of the fertilizing contact and invigorating conflict of different nationalities with their diverse gifts and tendencies. Islam is a tremendous denationalizing force and has done much to reduce the Eastern world to a monotonous uniformity. The Turks seem to be a race intellectually sterile, and like the peoples of North Africa in earlier days, they did not, when they accepted the religion of Arabia, give to its culture any such new form or breathe into it any such new spirit as did the Teutonic races when they embraced the religion and assimilated the literature of the Roman world."

Conquest restores difference of potential

War has been, perhaps, the greatest producer of fructifying culture contacts. Ward[1] points out that "the cross fertilization of cultures is to sociology what the cross fertilization of germs is to biology. A culture is a social structure, a social organism, if any one prefers, and ideas are its germs. These may be mixed or crossed, and the effect is the same as that of crossing hereditary strains. The process by which the greater part of this has been accomplished, at least in the early history of human society, is the struggle of races." "A race of men may be looked upon as a physical system possessing a large amount of potential energy, but often having reached such a complete state of equilibrium that it is incapable of performing any but the normal functions of growth and multiplication." But "by sheer force of circumstance,

[1] "Pure Sociology," 235.

by the exuberant fertility of mankind, by the pushing out of boundaries to avoid overcrowding, by wanderings and migrations, different races, charged with potential energy locked up in varied cults and customs, tongues and tendencies, experience wholly fortuitous encounters and collisions, resulting in conflicts and conquests, whereby all these divergent idea-germs are first hurled promiscuously together and then rudely jostled and stirred into a heterogeneous menstruum that tends to polarize on the social spindle, but ultimately blends." [1] "For all primitive and early undeveloped races, certainly, the condition of peace is a condition of social stagnation." [2]

Warfare brings forward the bold experimenter and innovator

Jenks says: [3] "Real war is a death struggle, and each combatant will strain every nerve to gain the advantage. If any one will show him a new dodge for defeating his enemy, he will take it and be thankful. He will not ask if it is consecrated by the wisdom of his ancestors." He points out that the state when it first replaced the tribe was untraditional. "The founders of the State were all successful warriors, who had won success by new combinations, new methods, daring disregard of tradition. It was hardly probable that, under their *régime*, the old traditional, customary life would be continued. Their watchword was *ability*, not custom." "All over Europe the break-up of patriarchal society is marked by a striking change in the idea of *nobility*. The old *nobility of birth* and *wealth*, the members of the sacred families of the *tribe* and *clan*, the great lords of cattle, are replaced by the *royal nobility*, whose hall-mark is the choice of the king."

[1] "Pure Sociology," 236. [2] *Ibid.*, 238.

[3] "History of Politics," 79.

Morris[1] points out how war promotes progress. "An isolated nation is in the same position as an isolated individual. Its experiences are limited, its ideas few and narrow in range. Its thoughts move in one fixed channel, and the other powers of its mind are apt to become virtually aborted." "Yet peace, in all barbarian and semi-civilized nations, seems to tend strongly toward this condition of isolation; and such isolation in its conservative influence is a fatal bar to any wide or continuous progress. The long persistence of one form of government, of one condition of social customs, of one line of thought, tends to produce that uniformity of character which is so fatally opposed to any width of development or breadth of mental grasp. From uniformity arises stagnation." "Variety of influences and conditions alone can yield a healthy and vigorous growth of thought. The movement of the national mind in any one line must soon cease. Its limit is quickly reached, unless it be aided by development in other directions." "Were nations, after attaining the limit of progress in their special lines, to be thoroughly mingled, each falling heir to the mental growth of all the others, a sudden and rapid intellectual progress might well be achieved, hosts of new ideas arising from this grand influx of new experiences. In barbarian and semi-civilized communities such an intermingling proceeds but slowly in times of peace. A certain degree of intercommerce and of emigration may exist. But emigration under barbarian conditions does not usually bring peoples into contact, except it be the harsh contact of war. The only peaceful contact is the commercial one. Merchants, undoubtedly, in early times penetrated foreign tribes and

[1] *Popular Science Monthly*, 47, pp. 826–831 *passim*.

nations, and brought home, in addition to their wares, stories of what they had seen and learned abroad. But the merchants were too few, too ignorant and prejudiced, and too little given to observation, to spread much useful information in this way; and their peoples were too self-satisfied to give up any customs and beliefs of their own for those thus brought them.

In primitive times no contact of peoples except through war

"How, then, could any effective result from national contact be produced? In primitive times the only effective agency must have been that of war. Destructive as this is in its results, it has the one useful effect of thoroughly commingling diverse peoples, bringing them into the closest contact with each other, and forcing upon the attention of each the advantages possessed by the other. The caldron of human society must be set boiling before its contents can fully mingle and combine. War is a furnace in which this ebullition takes place, and through whose activity human ideas are forced to circulate through and through the minds of men.

Warfare breaks up habit

"But there is a special cause that renders war peculiarly effective in this direction. In every war there are two peoples to be considered, the invaders and the invaded. The latter remains at home, on the defensive, its government intact, its prejudices condensed by hatred of the invaders, its people strongly bent on both mental and material resistance. The invaders, on the contrary, not only leave their country behind them, but they leave its laws and conditions as well. They march under new skies, over new soils, through new climates. They come into the closest contact with new customs, laws, and conditions. And their local prejudices only partially march with them. The laws of the peaceful state are abrogated

in the army. Its members are brought under other laws and disciplines. Religious influences weaken. A sense of liberty fills the mind of the soldier; expectancy arises; new hopes and fears are engendered; the old quiet devotion to law becomes a tendency to license.

A career of conquest emancipates a people from custom

"Thus the mind of the soldier is in a state essentially unlike that of the peaceful citizen." "It is in a state rendering it a quick and ready solvent of new experiences. All its fixity of ideas is broken up, the deep foundations of its prejudices are shaken, it is in a receptive condition; fresh thoughts readily pass the broken barriers of its reserve." "For this reason we find races which have dwelt long in self-satisfied barbarism suddenly leaping into civilization when they assume the rôle of conquerors. The savage hordes of Timur developed, in a few generations, into the comparatively civilized Mogul people of India. From the Saxon pirates who conquered England an Alfred the Great soon arose.

War commingles the products of local and tribal development

"Thus the world progressed through its long ages of partial civilization. The combined experiences of the members of the tribe yielded a certain degree of advancement, and there stopped. Each tribe differed from all others to the extent that its experiences and their resulting ideas differed. During peace the tribes repelled each other and remained intact, each with its special form of mental progress. In war they overflowed each other, greatly diversified thoughts and habits were brought into intimate contact, new ideas were engendered from the mixture, new forms of civilization arose. And as war was almost incessant, so these new products of thought were constantly brought into existence. Nomads became agriculturists through conquest; but the habits and ideas

gained in a nomadic life mingled with those of the conquered agriculturists, and yielded a new and superior result." "Mountaineers brought down their ideas to combine them with those born of the plain. Deserts and river valleys poured their common thought results into new and more comprehensive minds. The great ebullition went on. East mingled with west, north with south, mountain with plain, seashore with interior; men's thoughts fused and boiled incessantly; new compounds constantly appeared; the range of ideas grew wider and higher; and mental development steadily advanced — though over the ruins of empires and through the ashes of man's most valued possessions."

But prolonged warfare may overload a society with structure

But prolonged warfare, especially with those of a different religion, may so aggrandize and intrench the great conservative structures, State and Church, that individuality is stifled and development is arrested. Eight centuries of fighting against the Moors so imbued Spain with blind loyalty and fanatical orthodoxy that she finally became dead to the progress of the world.[1] Again, geographical remoteness may cut off a people from external stimuli. Says Sheffield[2] of China: "The first cause of arrested development that may be mentioned is the wide separation of China from other great centres of civilization, which deprived Chinese thought in its formative period of the inspiration that would have been derived from the inflow of fresh ideas. Buddhism entered China at the beginning of the Christian era. Mohammedanism and Nestorianism followed in the seventh and eighth centuries; but this

[1] See Buckle's eloquent indictment, "History of Civilization," II, 121–122.

[2] *Forum*, 29, p. 590.

was long after the formative period of Chinese social life."

Family loyalty ties down the individual

Familism fosters conservative feeling. Family roof-trees, portrait galleries, heirlooms, visits and reunions, attention to family and local history, emphasis on genealogy and relationship, open channels for the descent of family traditions and create a sentiment for the past. The sacrifice of individual inclination to family considerations often amounts to a sacrifice of the living to the dead. When the hero of "Coningsby" took it into his head to form a deliberate conviction, his grandfather cried, "You go with your family, sir, like a gentleman; you are not to consider your opinions, like a philosopher or a political adventurer." Aristocracies always magnify lineage, ancestral achievement, and family honors and privileges, so that, quite aside from the dictate of their class interests, they cannot help imbibing the conservative spirit. The middle and working classes, lacking time and means for cultivating these sentiments, let their thought and feeling be shaped by present facts rather than ancient facts, and are therefore the mainstay of liberalism and reform. Note how, in our South, familism, fostered by the aforetime aristocratic spirit engendered by the slave régime, goes hand-in-hand with ultra-conservatism.

Dissolution of the kin group makes for individual freedom and initiative

Whatever makes the support of one's kin group less needful — protection by public authorities rather than by fellow-clansmen, education at the public expense, public poor relief, facilities for life insurance — undermines it. The universal westward migration that prevailed during the settlement of our country, by incessantly snapping ties between blood relatives and thereby weakening clan feeling, helped to individualize Americans and has un-

doubtedly been a factor in their progressiveness. There are signs, however, that familism is on the increase in the United States,[1] and, if so, conservatism will grow.

SUMMARY

Among the factors that favor custom imitation may be distinguished: ancestor worship; giving authority and direction to the old; hypertrophy of regulative organizations, such as State and Church; physical isolation; linguistic isolation; social isolation; house-life; illiteracy; reverence for an ancient sacred book; the clannishness of oppressed groups; coercive methods of assimilation; sedentariness; lack of culture contacts; familism.

Among the factors that oppose custom imitation may be distinguished: giving authority and direction to the young; improved means of communication; the substitution of a national language for a dialect, or *patois;* civil and social equality; guest-friendship; the admission of women to activities and association outside the home; literacy; diffusion of education; freedom of discussion; freedom of investigation; attractive methods of assimilation; travel and migration; war and conquest; individualization.

EXERCISES

1. Show how the rise of romantic love helps emancipate society from the past.

2. What are the effects upon woman of restricting her to the home "sphere"?

3. Is it well to regard some topics as too "sacred" to be discussed at all?

4. Contrast lay control and clerical control of a church in their effect on its conservatism.

[1] Craze for genealogy and heraldry, manifest ambition of multi-millionnaires to transmute themselves into aristocrats by acquiring the necessary lineage, rage for hereditary patriotic societies such as Society of Mayflower Descendants, Society of Colonial Wars, Society of Colonial Dames of America, National Society of Colonial Dames, Founders and Patriots of America, Daughters of the Revolution, Daughters of the American Revolution, Sons of Revolutionary Sires, etc.

5. Compare in point of flexibility: a religion based on a revelation of the Divine Will completed in ancient writings; one based on a continuing revelation through an ecclesiastical organization; one based on such revelation as may from time to time be vouchsafed through individuals.

6. Contrast the laboratory method with the text-book method in forming the open interrogative mind.

7. Why should the college curriculum give more place to the forming sciences — bacteriology, psychology, economics, sociology — than to the well-settled sciences?

8. Does the science of history foster the conservative spirit?

9. What is the tendency, in this respect, of the study of literary masterpieces?

CHAPTER XIV

THE FIELDS OF CUSTOM IMITATION

Custom rules certain segments of life

THERE appear to be certain fields of life, such as industry, business, and the advancement of science, where *merit* rules; other fields, like dress, personal adornment, display, luxury, equipage, and amusements, which are the happy hunting-grounds of *novelty;* and, finally, certain fields, like language, ceremony, ritual, worship, government, relations of races, sexes, and classes, in which *custom* prevails. These last are the fossil-bearing strata of society, the relic-yielding, river-drift caves. No other fields yield so much to the explorer in quest of materials for reconstructing the past.

If we investigate why custom rules in one department of life and not in another, we come upon certain general truths.

1. *A survival is not kicked aside until it gets in the way.*

Just as a settler tolerates the stumps in the pasture till he wants to plough it up, so we put up with the *dêbris* of the past until it seriously incommodes us; then we clear it away. In India caste lines are held rigid until railway eating-houses come in. Then, when it is eat with the low-caste man or go hungry, the caste lines begin to bend. Ganges water is religiously drunk till modern sanitation

provides a supply of better water near at hand. On the same principle a vestigial organ — pineal gland, third eyelid, vermiform appendix — held in the firm clasp of heredity, is reproduced indefinitely until a moment comes when it begins seriously to hinder survival; then natural selection seizes upon it and roots it up.[1] Now, effete customs cannot live on in a field like warfare, where the spearmen who come out against Gatlings perish and with them their belated style of fighting; or industry, where those who cling to the hand-tool in the age of the machine starve; or business, where the merchant who does without telephone, typewriter, or the loose-leaf system fails; or the professions, where resistance to the use of ether or anti-toxin brings ruin. In all such fields it is not necessary that all become open-minded. Competition forces the pace. If one out of twenty is progressive enough to adopt the happy innovation, the other nineteen are obliged to follow suit or abandon the field entirely. Even religion starts forward under this spur, and the interdenominational rivalry for members and popular favor obliges conservatives themselves to lower the bars of creed. On the other hand, fields like ceremony (curtsey, wedding, coronation), festivals (Hallowe'en, St. Valentine's Day, rolling Easter

Where there is sharp competition, custom cannot thrive

[1] "The habit of keeping provisions stored up within the fortified church walls, to this day extant in most Saxon villages [of Transylvania], is clearly a remnant of the time when sieges had to be looked for. Even now the people seem to consider their goods to be in greater security here than in their own barns and lofts. The outer fortified wall around the church is often divided into deep recesses or alcoves, in each of which stands a large wooden chest securely locked, and filled with grain or flour, while the little surrounding turrets or chapels are used as storehouses for home-cured bacon." — GERARD, "The Land beyond the Forest," 67–68.

No doubt a few bad seasons would break up this wasteful custom.

eggs), forms of address (Madam = My lady, Good-by = God be with you), modes of spelling, riddles, proverbs, and everything pertaining to children (lullabies, Mother Goose, "King's ×," "King's Cruse," "Tit-tat-toe"), being untested by competition, are full of survivals. Government departments, missing the enlivening prick of competition, cling to antiquated procedure. The commonplace, uneducated woman is ingenious, experimental, and open to novelty, only during the brief period when she is competing with other maidens for masculine favor. Once she has achieved a fixed status as wife she is probably content to do as her mother did.

The alcoves of social life become cobwebbed with custom

2. *Custom rules in the less accessible fields.*

In the recesses of the home, live on practices that could not endure the open air. The way a man tills his field is more subject to invidious comparison than the way a woman washes her dishes or cares for her babies. Cookery, kitchen utensils, table manners, personal ablutions, courtship, christening, nameday and birthday observances, family ceremonies and festivals, are ruled by tradition because they are private. So long as the making of garments is a household art, costume may show great stability. Thus, some believe that the shaggy sheepskin mantle and the close-fitting woollens of the Bulgarians still hint, amid the vine and the olive, of the bleak Central Asian home of the race.

3. *Collective habits are more stable than individual habits.*

When tied together, men follow the beaten track

The reason is that they cannot be dropped by man after man, but must await concerted abandonment or modification. However bad the old highway has become, no single teamster can afford to survey a road for himself;

yet it may be long before a sufficient number can be brought to coöperate in building a new highway.[1]

[1] This persistence of the superannuated until men are ready to make a collective effort for reform is hit off in Sam Foss's poem: —

"THE CALF PATH

"One day, through a primeval wood,
A calf walked home as good calves should,
And left a trail all bent askew,
A crooked trail, as all calves do.

"Since then two hundred years have fled,
And I infer the calf is dead,
But still he left behind his trail,
And thereby hangs my moral tale.

"The trail was taken up next day
By a lone dog that passed that way;
And then a wise bell-wether sheep
Pursued the trail o'er dale and steep,
And led his flock behind him, too,
As good bell-wethers always do.

"And from that day, o'er hill and glade,
Through those old woods a path was made,
And many men wound in and out,
And bent and turned and crooked about,
And uttered words of righteous wrath,
Because 'twas such a crooked path.

"But still they followed — do not laugh —
The first migrations of that calf,
And through this winding woodway stalked
Because he wobbled when he walked."

He proceeds to tell us that the path became a lane, and that the lane became a road, where many a poor horse toiled on with his load beneath the burning sun and travelled some three miles in one.

"And men in two centuries and a half
Trod in the footsteps of that calf,
For men are prone to go it blind,
Along the calf-ways of the mind,
And work away from sun to sun,
To do as other men have done."

Festivals of remote origin are usually of wide observance

On the survival of criminal festivals, Fererro[1] remarks: "We see, therefore, that collective crime has opposed a greater resistance than individual crime to the progress of civilization. But why have these criminal festivals endured so long, while individual customs have been undergoing transformation?" "A crowd of men is always more afraid of the new, more conservative, than are the men who compose it. For that reason a usage is more stable and less subject to variation in proportion to the number of men who observe it." "Every one can observe that it is easy for a man to change his individual habits, but that the habits of a family, being more fixed, are changed with greater difficulty." "But fixed as family customs are, they are unstable enough if we compare them to the usages of large aggregates, to the whole population of a city, for example. In all Europe, in Italy, France, and Germany, some of the cities still celebrate the festivals of the Middle Ages, occasionally even Roman festivals, which plunge a whole population every year into the past again. The costumes, the banners, and the signals, everything in these festivals is old, and no one would be satisfied to use anything modern in them, for all their beauty would then seem to vanish. We find yet more superannuated usages when we consider still larger human aggregates; for while in the usages of a city we find survivals of its history, in the usages common to all civilized men we find survivals of the ancient primitive life, customs which appertain to the savage period. Of such, for example, is the worship of ancestors." "The rites relating to it have been nearly entirely abandoned, yet these rites, which exist no

[1] *Popular Science Monthly*, 43, pp. 762–765.

longer in individual practice, still survive as a general usage among all Roman Catholic peoples, for the ceremony of the day of the dead is nothing else than a survival from the ancient ancestral religion.

What men can quit individually vanishes sooner than what they must quit jointly

"A mass of men is thus always more afraid of novelty than the men that compose it: these may change their feelings and their ideas, but they come together; the feelings and ideas acquired by the individuals will have no influence, or but little, upon their conduct. What is the cause of this contradiction? Man . . . hates all novelty and tries to preserve everything that exists — his ideas and feelings — so long as he can, without changing them. Yet, when very strong necessities urge him, man . . . changes his habits and his ideas, and rebels against institutions and laws he had once venerated; but it is always a painful task, a disagreeable effort for every man. . . . Difficult as this change may be for each man, it is still more so when a collective usage is concerned; for then the opinion of all the other men to the same effect and imitation reënforce the neophoby natural to man. The struggle is not only against one's own conservative instincts, but also against the fear of being alone in neglecting a usage which all others observe.[1] For these usages to pass away there must, therefore, be causes acting upon the whole mass of those who observe them, producing gradual decadence. Now these causes would naturally act more slowly than those which produce individual changes of manners, ideas, etc.; they

[1] Says an Igorrote chief: "The Americans don't like us to take heads, but what can we do? Other people take heads from us. We have always done it. *The women won't marry our men if they do not take heads.*" — HOLT, "Undistinguished Americans," 227.

will act more slowly, too, as the aggregate of men subject to their influence is greater.

"So the genesis of criminal festivals is explained. When crimes become the object of legal repression and then of moral repulsion, men begin, each on his own account, to abstain from committing them. . . . But these criminal festivals, to which the ancient liberty and the ancient glory of crime have given rise, being usages common to a whole tribe or people, enjoy the advantage of the greater stability in collective usages. . . . Thus, the Dahomeyan, who is no longer a cannibal, becomes an anthropophagist again in the great public festivals that are celebrated after a victory; the East Indians slay men upon the foundations of a palace, but only when great public edifices are a-building; and the inhabitants of Sumatra, gentle enough in their ordinary customs, solemnly eat their old men, in the belief that they are thereby observing the most sacred of their duties as sons."

Immigrants quit their personal ways sooner than their communal ways

Roberts[1] shows that in the coal regions the Sclavs do not Americanize their corporate practices as rapidly as their individual practices. "The Sclav religiously observes the days on which the saints are commemorated and invariably takes a holiday. On sacred seasons of the year, such as Easter and Christmas, they are at great trouble to commemorate the historical events which form the basis of the Christian religion. On Easter, tombs are constructed in churches and a semi-military religious organization associated with the Church assigns quaternions of its members to guard them. Relays succeed each other for a period equal to that during which Christ is said to have remained in the grave. On Easter also mem-

[1] "Anthracite Coal Communities," 54–55.

bers carry baskets laden with provisions to the Church that the priest may bless them, and when they are brought home again the family sit down to the consecrated feast. At Christmas time, members of the Church go from door to door carrying emblems of the nativity and recite the story of the miraculous birth. Accompanying them are grotesque figures, representing the enemies of the Church, which add mirth to the visitations. These parties take up collections which are turned over to the priest. On Easter and Christmas a solemn procession is formed, when sacred relics are carried, and the members, chanting, march around the church or along the aisles. On Ascension Day branches of trees are cut down and hung over the doors of the houses and around the pictures of sacred personages in the homes."

"As the Sclavs gain in numbers and confidence they give greater publicity to their native customs and peculiarities. Troops of men will, on idle days, amuse themselves by playing a childish game which affords them much amusement. They carry charms and sacred relics with greater publicity than they did in former years. They do not enjoy their frolics and weddings with the same privacy as in the early years of their life in the coal fields." "Last Fourth of July, a company of Tyrolese paraded the streets with a hand-cart drawn by men, in which was placed a barrel of lager. Over it stood a comrade, goblet in hand and crowned with a garland of laurels, singing some jargon, while sitting on the rear end of the vehicle was another fellow with an accordion. Along the streets they marched to the strains of music and at intervals they stopped to drink the good beverage they celebrated in song. It was an imitation of the honor paid Bacchus

which was one of the most joyous festivities of ancient Rome." The greater obstinacy of the drinking of liquor at banquets or in "treating" than in private drinking is another illustration of the principle.

4. *Habits of consumption are more stable than habits of production.*

Mode of life changes more slowly than manner of work

There are a number of reasons for this. The former, being more private, are less subject to unfavorable comparison and criticism. Competition obliges one to change his ways of producing, but not his diet, costume, beverages, or house architecture. A large proportion of producers work under direction, but as consumer one is a free man. As children we consume long before we produce. Finally, our recollection of a form of enjoyment or consumption ("the old swimmin' hole," "pies like mother used to make") is more vivid and lasting than our recollection of a manner of doing work.

Fixity of the Standard of Living

Habits of consumption constitute the *standard of living*, which may become so imperious as to overrule the sex and family instincts and exercise a salutary check upon the growth of population. The stubbornness with which men cling to their customary standard of living is emphasized by Mrs. Mead:[1] "At the other extreme of society is found the class that has not yet developed wants of a qualitative character. Included here are all who are still in a caste system; for example, the Chinese, the coolies, the European peasantry. From generation to generation they eat the same food, dwell in the same houses, wear the same clothing, work at the same trades, and indulge in the same pleasures. The Hindoo who starves to death during the famine rather than eat wheat,

[1] *Journal of Political Economy*, IX, 228.

and the Italian who imports macaroni and olives, and who puts up with expensive adulterated articles rather than change his diet, are characteristic of the class. To them must be added the degenerate element of our city slums. On the borders is the backwoodsman, who, in his isolation, has become inured to the hardships of his life and indifferent to the advances made in comfortable living. He is contented with a ham-and-egg diet, and he has implicit belief in the superiority of everything home-made, from soap to butter, and from shock mattress to clothes. In general, education for the lower class must mean the excitation of new wants."

Laborers may accommodate earnings to cost of living rather than cost of living to earnings

The inelasticity of habits of consumption explain certain economic paradoxes. Says Weil, of Mexico:[1] "The low wages, however, appear to be largely the result of the ignorance and improvidence of the natives, and it is somewhat questionable whether higher daily wages would permanently benefit the peon, unless at the same time his standard of life rose. The experience of railroad companies and other employers of labor in Mexico has been that higher daily wages increase idleness, and that, if the wages for a day's work be doubled, the number of working days will be halved. It is also a fact confirmed by the experience and observation of many employers that the amount of labor performed bears no direct relation to the wages, and that even where work is done by the task instead of by the day the promise of additional remuneration will seldom result in an increased output." Says our consul[2] of the working class

[1] Bulletin of the U. S. Dept. of Labor, No. 38, p. 48.

[2] H. R. Docs., 1884–1885, vol. 26, "Labor in America, Asia, etc.," 239.

of Ecuador: "The working class in the main lives for to-day, letting to-morrow take care of itself. This class works sufficiently to earn a subsistence, but exhausts no energies in efforts at accumulation. The cause is an example handed from age to age and generation to generation. The tendency is to fall into a beaten track, to do things now as they were done last year, or ten or fifty years ago. They are not hostile to innovations and new things; but they do not seek them, and only accept them when it is easier to accept them than to cast them aside. . . . There are no signs that either the rate of wages or the general condition of the working class will be changed for many years to come. When there is a great change, it must result from external influences. The working class appears to be much more contented with its condition here than the same class in those countries where a greater degree of intelligence and a higher order of civilization abounds."

Ease of exploiting a custom-bound people

Among a custom-bound people the problem of exploitive government is simple. So long as they do not threaten the laboring man's customary comforts, the ruling classes can absorb all the rest of the social income without exciting a revolt. With railroads, mines, plantations, and factories, they may multiply the national output by three, yet cede the masses no share in the new prosperity. Such, generally speaking, is the technique of exploitation in the South American countries. On the other hand, where the working classes have become discontented and outreaching and ambitious, it is necessary for the ruling class to concede them a share in the increase of social income. Discontent and restlessness and striving to better one's condition, penetrating society to the very

bottom, is the only adequate guarantee for the permanence of democratic government.

Asiatic immigrants will borrow our skill sooner than our standards of living

It is their relative immobility of consumption that makes the unrestricted immigration of Asiatics so menacing to the future of our country. The coolies, acquiring our industrial methods — and consequently our earning power — ere they have accepted our standards of living, would multiply at a higher rate than Americans, and would therefore tend to supplant the native stock. Elsewhere the writer has said: Suppose Asiatics flock to this country and, enjoying equal opportunities under our laws, learn our methods and compete actively with Americans. They may be able to produce and therefore earn in the ordinary occupations, say three-fourths as much as Americans; but if their standard of life is only half as high, the Asiatic will marry before the American feels able to marry. The Asiatic will rear two children while his competitor feels able to rear but one. The Asiatic will increase his children to six under conditions that will not encourage the American to raise more than four. Both, perhaps, are forward-looking and influenced by the worldly prospects of their children; but where the Oriental is satisfied with the outlook, the American, who expects to school his children longer and place them better, shakes his head.

By freer multiplication Asiatics will replace Americans

Now, to such a competition there are three possible results. First, the American, becoming discouraged, may relinquish his exacting standard of decency and begin to multiply as freely as the Asiatic. This, however, is likely to occur only among the more reckless and worthless elements of our population. Second, the Asiatic may catch up our wants as well as our arts, and acquire

the higher standard and lower rate of increase of the American. This is just what contact and education are doing for the French Canadians in New England, for the immigrants in the West, and for the negro in some parts of the South; but the members of a great culture race like the Chinese show no disposition, even when scattered sparsely among us, to assimilate to us or to adopt our standards. Not until their self-complacency has been undermined at home and an extensive intellectual ferment has taken place in China itself will the Chinese become assimilable elements. Thirdly, the standards may remain distinct, the rates of increase unequal, and the silent replacement of Americans by Asiatics go on unopposed until the latter monopolize all industrial occupations, and the Americans shrink to a superior caste able perhaps by virtue of its genius, its organization, and its vantage of position to retain for a while its hold on government, education, finance, and the direction of industry, but hopelessly beaten and displaced as a race. In other words, the American farm hand, mechanic, and operative might wither away before the heavy influx of a prolific race from the Orient, just as in classic times the Latin husbandman vanished before the endless stream of slaves poured into Italy by her triumphant generals.

5. *Custom is powerful in matters of feeling.*

Feelings outlive their causes

This is because there are no objective or logical tests to emancipate us from a transmitted emotional attitude. In comparison with beliefs and practices, loves and hatreds, admiration and contempt are inveterate. Recall the hereditary vendettas of Corsica, Calabria, Scotland, and Kentucky. Think of the tenacity of popular attachment to effete dynasties like the Stuarts and the Bourbons.

Says Bryce:[1] "The Franks in Gaul during the seventh and eighth centuries were as fierce and turbulent a race as the world has ever seen. Their history is a long record of incessant and ferocious strife. From the beginning of the seventh century the Merwing kings, descendants of Clovis, became, with scarcely an exception, feeble and helpless. Their power passed to their viziers, the Mayors of the Palace, who from about A.D. 638 onwards were kings *de facto*. But the Franks continued to revere the blood of Clovis, and when, in 656, a rash Mayor of the Palace had deposed a Merwing and placed his own son on the throne, they rose at once against the insult offered to the ancient line; and its scions were revered as titular heads of the nation for a century longer, till Pippin the Short, having induced the Pope to pronounce the deposition of the last Merwing and to sanction the transfer of the crown to himself, sent that prince into a monastery."

Beliefs can be controverted but not feelings

That feudal loyalty dies slowly may be seen in the affection of Scottish Highlanders for their clan chief long after English law had transformed him into a grasping, relentless landlord, and in the hereditary tie that in Old Japan bound a *samurai* line to a *daimyo* line. National friendships and enmities tend to become inveterate, as witness the traditional feeling between the French and the Poles on the one hand, between the French and English on the other. The Irishman's hatred of the "Saxon" passes undiminished from parent to child, and even bears transplantation to American soil. The writer once saw an Englishman and a Scotchman, in the presence of ladies, come to blows over a chance

[1] "Studies in History and Jurisprudence," II, 22.

allusion to a battle between their peoples six centuries ago!

Past events shape the present chiefly through the feelings they inspired

Inter-race feelings survive time and change. Recall the undying antipathy between Spaniard and Moor, Kurd and Armenian, Turk and Macedonian. The relation between Boer and Kaffir is an open sore, the color line in our South is far from fading away, and people still bait the Jews "because they crucified the Saviour." Though their Mogul masters have long been dust, the Bengali still cringe like spaniels under the tone of command. Inter-class feelings are hard to uproot. Witness the persistence of Brahminical disdain, of seigniorial pride, of plantation manners, of Helot crouch, and peasant deference. Inter-confessional feelings live long. Scratch a Scotchman and you come upon an antipathy to the Church of England that goes back to the persecution of the Covenanters, Claverhouse, and the Massacre of Glencoe. The "No Popery" fanaticism of the English masses is a heritage from the fires of Smithfield, the Spanish Armada, and the Bloody Assizes. The riots between Orangemen and Catholics that once convulsed American cities show how an antipathy may keep its vitality for two centuries.

Relations between men and women governed by ancient standardized sentiments

Inter-sex feelings, such as male overbearingness or female mistrust, long outlast the state of things to which they correspond. Chivalry and dependence are still the standard sentiments between young men and women, even though they have nothing more to go on than rescuing the young lady from a mouse or giving her superfluous aid in alighting from a car. Hence, endless posing and attitudinizing. Man insists on protecting and woman on clinging as in the rude and parlous times before the

ubiquitous policeman. Between youth and maid a "Platonic friendship" is impossible, not because it goes against their nature, but because it clashes with the dominant tradition that any liking between them *must* be sentimental.

Why mode of disposing of the dead is a race characteristic

Strong feeling about the disposal of the dead makes us, against our better judgment, resist cremation. The mode of disposal (burial, burning, embalming, hanging in trees, exposure to birds, throwing into the sacred river) is for each people so characteristic and stable that by this mark alone ethnologists and archæologists can trail a race across wide stretches of time and space. Feelings about the gods is long-lived.[1] Instance the reappearance of Christianity in France after the submergence of religion during the Revolution. Dostoiewsky tells a story of the Russian who on becoming enlightened broke the icons that adorned the altar, put out the candles, and then replaced the icons with the works of atheistic philosophers, after which the candles were piously relighted! Likewise, the Religion of Humanity founded by Comte retains the familiar emotions, but gives them a new object. The feeling for an ideal lasts because it is awakened so early. The reason why great men of action so often give their mothers the credit for their eminence is that a sublime character is grounded not on moral principles, but on moral admirations and detestations, *i.e.*, on personal ideals, and these are aroused in

[1] "Although the Sakalava people (in Madagascar) have adhered to Islam for three centuries, 'they have adopted Islam without bringing any notable change to their former customs and manners.' Allah and the Prophet take a prominent place in their religious ceremonies, yet still inferior to Zanahatry and Angatra, their national divinities." —St. Louis Congress of Arts and Sciences, II, 511–512.

us by our mothers in the tender years before the father's influence becomes strong. The love that native-born colonials cherish for the mother country is usually transmitted to them through their mothers. It has been suggested that the absence of the filial feeling for Holland among the South African Boers is due to the fact that the first settlers were wived with forlorn orphan girls, sent out from the poorhouses of Holland, who naturally had no tender memories or warm feeling for the mother land to pass on to their children.

Feeling cannot be overcome by arguments

Discussion is more destructive to hold-over beliefs than to hold-over feelings. Argument carries the outworks of pretext, but finds that they mask the impregnable inner citadel of "I like this!" "I hate that!" Only by vivid images and impressions that excite counter feelings is it possible to extirpate a superannuated sectarian feud, class antipathy, or race prejudice. No force of logic can kill these inherited venoms; but they may be neutralized by wider contacts and fresh experiences.

6. *Institutions of control — law, government, religion, ceremony, and mores — are fossiliferous.*[1]

The agencies of control need the prestige of age

All these endeavor to bind the will of man to social requirements. In this difficult and ticklish undertaking nothing helps like *prestige;* and, of all the prestiges, that of great antiquity is for most men the strongest and most reliable.

Archaism of law

The archaic spirit of law is shown by the appeal to precedent, the fiction that the law is immemorial custom, the venerable "trial by jury," the uncouthness of legal phraseology, the ancient forms of procedure, the retention of wigs, gowns, seals, and criers. Says John Stuart Mill

[1] See Ross, "Social Control," 190–194.

of English law in the time of Bentham:[1] "The law came to be like the costume of a full-grown man who had never put off the clothes made for him when he first went to school. Band after band had burst, and as the rent widened, then, without removing anything except what might drop off of itself, the hole was darned, or patches of fresh law were brought from the nearest shop, and stuck on. Hence, all ages of English history have given one another rendezvous in English law: their several products may be seen all together, not interfused, but heaped upon one another, as many different ages of the earth may be read in some perpendicular section of its surface; the deposits of each successive period not substituted, but superimposed on those of the preceding. And in the world of law, no less than in the physical world, every commotion and conflict of the elements has left its mark behind in some break or irregularity of the strata. Every struggle which ever rent the bosom of society is apparent in the disjointed condition of the part of the field of law which covers the spot; nay, the very traps and pitfalls which one contending party set for another are still standing; and the teeth, not of hyenas only, but of foxes and all cunning animals, are imprinted on the curious remains found in these antediluvian caves."

Archaism of government

The archaic spirit of government is seen in the clinging to traditional policy (Will of Peter the Great, Balance of Power, the Temporal Power, Monroe Doctrine); in the place conceded to classes long since decayed (the landed nobility in the British House of Lords); in the appeal to distant precedent and musty charters for the settlement of the rights and duties of to-day; in the hold

[1] "Dissertations and Discussions," I, Essay on Bentham.

of profligate dynasties; in that magical power of legitimacy which restored the French and Spanish Bourbons, and, when Germany, Italy, and Hungary attained unity or independence, made a crown the rallying point; in the blending of contradictions seen in constitutional monarchy, in the legalizing of revolutions, in the legitimating of usurpers, in the interpretation of written constitutions. Government, moreover, is full of survivals — court dress, court etiquette, regalia, titles, emblems of authority, royal polygamy, etc.

Archaism of organized religion

The archaic spirit of religion is attested by the use of flint knives in sacrifice or circumcision long after metal knives have come in, and of the fire drill for kindling the sacrificial flame after flint and tinder have become known; in the higher sanctity ascribed to candles over other illuminants; in the retention of Koptic in the liturgy of the Abyssinian Christians, of the Old Bactrian of the Zend-Avesta in Parsee worship, of the Arabic of the Koran among non-Arabic Mohammedans, of ancient Hebrew in the Jewish services, of Latin in Catholic worship, of Old English in Bible and Prayer Book; in the preference for the faulty King James version of the Bible; in the emphasis laid on Apostolic Succession; in the difficulty of bringing the Westminster Confession abreast of current Presbyterian thought; in the settlement of disputed points by appeal to the Bible or to the Fathers.[1]

Ceremony, too, is full of outworn symbols, gestures

[1] Nevertheless, when religious dogma and organization have been broken up and swept away by a powerful burst of prophetism, religion may show itself very radical and transformative so long as this current runs.

and picture actions of forgotten meaning, obsolete words, etc. To the folk-historian a marriage service, a royal coronation, the drinking of healths, or the rite of extreme unction is a museum of antiquity.

Only outworn and noxious traditions should be discredited

The reason why institutions of control are so full of survivals is that such institutions work the better the older they grow, which is not true of a construction in syntax, a funeral service, a pattern of tool or garment. Devices in the field of control, however crude at first, improve with age like wine. A duty enjoined in the old sacred books or the precept of an ancient sage binds us more than would the same if it came to us unhallowed by time. Crown and royal blood win for the Emperor Dom Pedro an obedience that his republican successors in Brazil can command only by military force. To ask religion, government, law, or morality to make extensive and thoroughgoing changes in a single generation is to ask an army to form a new line in the face of the enemy. There are cases in which the discrediting of tradition is like picking out the mortar that holds together the fabric of society. The immediate fruit of the French Revolution, as of the Protestant Reformation, was anarchy and the dissolution of morals. The withering interrogation of all maxims, doctrines, and ideals by men without a sense of the past may lead to a denial of everything save one's own will.

SUMMARY

By making the twentieth man master of the situation, competition produces a high death rate among outgrown customs.

The spirit of tradition is strong in everything pertaining to the home.

He travels farthest who travels alone. Everything in which men must move together is liable to fall behind the times.

Men will change their manner of working sooner than their manner of living.

When custom-bound men exploit richer opportunities, they enlarge their family rather than raise their standard of living.

For this reason the competition between races in the same area assumes two forms. The higher race may *outdo* the lower, or the lower may *underlive* the higher.

Feelings between races, nations, classes, sects, and sexes rarely correspond to the contemporary situation, but reflect some bygone situation.

Institutions of control are rich in survivals, because the prestige of age aids in control.

EXERCISES

1. Why is the official creed of a denomination less elevated in respect to infant damnation or eternal punishment than the personal creed of the average member?

2. Why do woman's legal rights lag behind her generally acknowledged moral rights?

3. Why is it a mistake to send the Indian girl back to her tribe when she finishes school?

4. Is our noisy manner of celebrating Independence Day on a level with the present taste of the American people?

5. Is the Jewish love of large families suited to a remote or to a present situation?

6. If you were trying to induce Jews and Christians, Orangemen and Catholics, Germans and Slavs, Poles and Lithuarians, to sink their enmities and unite in a labor movement, how would you proceed?

7. Why is it that our immigrants save so much more and "get ahead" so much sooner than the American born?

8. Why is it that as soon as the Chinese in Hawaii "adopt an American manner of life, they cease to be a depressing factor in the labor market"?

CHAPTER XV

RELATION OF CUSTOM IMITATION TO CONVENTIONALITY IMITATION

1. *There is a contrast between societies in respect to the relative power of custom and conventionality.*

Profound contrast between a traditional and an untraditional society

In some societies "old" equals "beloved." *Nihil mihi antiquius est* said Cicero, meaning "Nothing is dearer to me." In China "my elder brother" and "How old you look!" are forms of greeting. In such societies status, not competition, determines men's relations. Social consideration depends on one's birth. Religion is usually ancestor worship, in any case, tribal, exclusive, and non-proselyting. The hereditary principle prevails in government and priesthood, perhaps even in occupations. The family is patriarchal and the *patria potestas* is well-nigh unlimited. Local customary law prevails. The language differentiates into local and class dialects. Duties are more emphasized than rights. Morality imposes upon the individual sacrifices in view of certain permanent wants of his walled-in group — his family, tribe, city, canton, or country. Respect for old age, faithfulness to blood revenge, and feudal loyalty are resplendent virtues.

In other societies (as in the United States to-day) the watchwords are "progress," "enlightenment," "the age." The cant commendations are "brand new," "up-to-date," "latest and best," "new blood." No phrase is so damning as "behind the times." Society is individualistic and

competitive. Rights are more emphasized than duties. The spirit is cosmopolitan. Familism, clannishness, and Chauvinistic patriotism are considered "narrow." Pretensions founded on family, or the worthiness of some ancestor, are laughed at. Social grading is on the basis of some present fact — money, efficiency, achievement, education, or character. Language grows by incorporating terms which make their *début* as slang. Customary law is supplemented by legislation. The patriarchate dissolves. Religion proselytes. Philanthropy is honored. Morality summons the individual to sacrifice himself for certain *wide* interests — the public, humanity, posterity, race elevation. Its sanction is not divine command, but public opinion, honor, and self-respect.

2. *In the life history of a society there are alternating epochs of outlook and backlook, of "our time" and "our country."*

A society oscillates between nationalism and cosmopolitanism

These give us alternations of "breaking" and subsoiling, of expansion and deepening, of innovation and pause, of the rule of the Liberals and the rule of the Tories. France, in the last half of the eighteenth century, was all outlook, infatuated with classic, English, and American political models; now, with her cult of Joan of Arc and of Napoleon, her glance is backward. Germany was cosmopolitan in tone under Frederick the Great and his successors, but after 1806 (Fichte, Stein, Hardenberg), and again after 1870, backlook supervened. In American society there has been a great deal of outlook, but, since the series of Centennial celebrations (1875–1889), there has been a certain backlook showing itself in the revival of historical studies, in the formation of hereditary patriotic societies, and in the dread of "drifting away from the

ancient landmarks." In Japan an epoch of wholesale borrowing has been followed by backlook, while China, after long rusting in her bearings, is just beginning to mould herself after foreign models. After an epoch of cosmopolitanism, and reform on the basis of foreign example, a nation seems to experience a certain decay in the forces of social control. Law, religion, and morality suffer, and signs of disintegration in the form of rampant individualism or bitter class antagonism appear; thereupon there is an instinctive turning to and brooding over the past in the futile hope of recovering thereby solidarity and moral health.

3. *In times, in circles, and in matters, where custom imitation rules, new things try to appear old.*

When age lends prestige, the new pretends to be old

In early society, adoption of an outsider into the family was disguised as sonship, and naturalization into the tribe was the feigning of kinship. Just as Menelik, "King of kings" of Abyssinia, claims descent from Solomon and the Queen of Sheba, so the successful Germanic warrior-king felt obliged to acquire an aristocratic pedigree. Says Jenks:[1] "Leaders like Clovis, and Theodoric, and Alaric, and Egbert, . . . began to buttress up their authority by appeals to other sanctions (than military prestige). One of the most skilful of these appeals was the appropriation by the kings of the character and attributes of the tribal chief whom they had conquered or dispossessed. It is possible that, in a few cases, they were really and truly, members of tribal aristocracies, though probably not of the aristocracies of the tribes whom they had conquered. In most cases, they were simply adventurers who had obtained their positions by sheer

[1] "History of Politics," 85–86.

hard fighting. But they soon, by a series of fictions which could only have been accepted in a simple age, persuaded their subjects that they really were members of the ancient families whom they had overcome. The pedigree of an early European king generally led up to some well-known Hero who had long been regarded with reverence as a mythical ancestor of the tribe or tribes over which he was ruling."

In the same vein Napoleon, finding mere efficiency no solid basis for his rule, summoned the Pope from Rome to anoint him Emperor, received the acclamations of his army in the iron chair of Dagobert, held court at Aachen, first capital of the Holy Roman Empire, and in Milan crowned himself king of Italy with the Iron Crown of Charlemagne. Jesus represents himself as the "fulfilling of the Law," the Messiah. St. Paul in his epistle to the Romans endeavors to establish a sympathetic bond between Jewish law and Christianity. New legal principles masquerade as old ones. Maine[1] shows that both English Case-Law and the Roman Responsa Prudentum rest on fictions, and adds: "It is not difficult to understand why fictions in all their forms are particularly congenial to the infancy of society. They satisfy the desire for improvement, which is not quite wanting, at the same time that they do not offend the superstitious disrelish for change which is always present. At a particular stage of social progress they are invaluable expedients for overcoming the rigidity of law and, indeed, without one of them, the fiction of Adoption, which permits the family tie to be artificially created, it is difficult to understand how society would ever have escaped from its swaddling clothes, and

Legal fictions

[1] "Ancient Law," 25–26.

taken its first steps towards civilization." Of the Barbarian Codes Jenks observes:[1] "Written custom cannot be altered imperceptibly; it is always possible to point to the exact text, and show what it says. Nevertheless customs *must* alter in a progressive society; and so it was necessary to have successive *editions* of the written Codes, as in fact happen. Thus people came gradually to accept the idea that custom could be *altered;* and occasionally they even allowed the king, by way of bargain or agreement, to introduce certain deliberate alterations. No doubt a good many more alterations were secretly slipped in by the royal scribes who drew up the Codes."

English liberties held as an inheritance

Gallic logic recognizes the new for what it is, but in England every great political reform has posed as a hark back to the "ancient liberties" of the much-overworked Magna Charta. Says Burke:[2] "We wished at the period of the Revolution, and do now wish, to derive all we possess as *an inheritance from our forefathers.* Upon that body and stock of inheritance we have taken care not to inoculate any scion alien to the nature of the original plant. All the reformations we have hitherto made, have proceeded upon the principle of reference to antiquity. . . . You will see that Sir Edward Coke, that great oracle of our law, and indeed all the great men who follow him to Blackstone, are industrious to prove the pedigree of our liberties. They endeavor to prove that the ancient charter, the Magna Charta of King John, was connected with another positive charter from Henry I, and that both the one and the other were nothing more than a re-affirmance of the still more ancient standing law of the kingdom. . . . In the famous

[1] "History of Politics," 126.

[2] "Reflections on the Revolution in France," 36–40, *passim.*

law called the Petition of Right, the parliament says to the king, 'Your subjects have *inherited* this freedom,' claiming their franchises, not on abstract principles as the 'rights of men,' but as the rights of Englishmen, and as a patrimony derived from their forefathers. . . . You will observe that from Magna Charta to the Declaration of Right, it has been the uniform policy of our constitution to claim and assert our liberties as an *entailed inheritance* derived to us from our forefathers and to be transmitted to our posterity; as an estate specially belonging to the people of this kingdom without any reference whatever to any more general or prior right. By this means our constitution preserves an unity in so great a diversity of its parts. We have an inheritable crown; an inheritable peerage; and a House of Commons and a people inheriting privileges, franchises, and liberties, from a long line of ancestors. . . . By this means our liberty becomes a noble freedom, it carries an imposing and majestic aspect. It has a pedigree and illustrating ancestors. It has its bearings and its ensigns armorial. It has its gallery of portraits; its monumental inscriptions; its records, evidences, and titles. We procure reverence to our civil institutions on the principle upon which nature teaches us to revere individual men,—on account of their age, and on account of those from whom they are descended."

Thanks to our rigid Constitution, the powers that enable the Federal government to cope with difficulties beyond the ken or foresight of the fathers cannot be granted by the present will of the people. We expect our judges to draw them out of the Constitution as a juggler draws rabbits out of a hat.

Columbus found it useless to urge his idea of the rotundity of the earth unless he could prove it to be *old*. Filmer in his *Patriarcha* sought to ground the authority of Charles II on the authority granted by Jehovah to the patriarchs of the Old Testament! Rousseau appealed to an imaginary "state of nature" in justification of his political ideals. The French revolutionaries found warrant for their acts in the history of Athens and Sparta. Henry George made much of primitive land-holding policy in urging his single-tax reform. The Mussulman sect of Wahabees poses as a return to primitive Islam, just as sect after sect of Protestants has proclaimed itself a restoration of Apostolic Christianity. Theosophy aims to be impressive by surrounding itself with the glamour of hoary Hindu antiquity. A Methodist convert to Darwinism seeks to commend the doctrine to his brethren by proving John Wesley to be an evolutionist. It was, again, the dread of newness that made Charles II claim the reign of Cromwell as part of his own and Louis XVIII, in 1814, date his earliest state papers "in the nineteenth year of our reign."

4. *In times, in circles, and in matters, where conventionality imitation rules, the old tries to appear new.*

When novelty lends prestige, the old pretends to be new

In our own society the new has unusual prestige, and hence the old hides her gray locks with a wig and decks out her withered countenance with the finery of youth. Aristocracy pretends to find its scientific vindication in the Darwinian doctrine of natural inequality and survival of the fittest. The truth is, of course, that privilege suspends for its darlings that very struggle for existence which conduces to the survival of the fittest. Defenders of the ecclesiastical "prohibited degrees" — within which mar-

riage will not be solemnized — justify their anachronism by citing facts on the evils of in-and-in breeding; whereas union with a deceased wife's sister is not in-and-in breeding at all. Sabbatarianism eagerly identifies its "holy day" with the "day of rest" that social science finds to be necessary for the well-being of toilers. Divines pretend that the mystical transmission of Adam's guilt to all his descendants is confirmed by the modern investigations into heredity. Exploitive imperialism arrogates to itself the support of sociology, and talks finely about a "civilizing mission" and "the duty of the higher races to the lower." A brutal selfishness as old as the Ice Age struts about in phrases borrowed from the Darwinists, and bids us see in the prosperity of the wicked the Success of the Adapted!

The confirmation of dogma by "science"

Even the dogma of the Immaculate Conception finds countenance in the "latest science." Fiske[1] gives a specimen of Rev. Joseph Cook's manner of vindicating orthodoxy. "According to Mr. Cook, Professor Huxley says: '*Throughout almost the whole series of living beings, we find agamogenesis, or not-sexual generation.*' After a pause, Mr. Cook proceeded in a lower voice: 'When the topic of the origin of the life of our Lord on the earth is approached from the point of view of the microscope, some men, who know not what the holy of holies in physical and religious science is, say that we have no example of the origin of life without two parents.' He went on to cite the familiar instances of parthenogenesis in bees and silk moths, and then proceeded as follows: 'Take up your Mivart, your Lyell, your Owen, and you will read [where?] this same important fact which Huxley here asserts, when he says that the law that perfect individuals may be virginally

[1] "A Century of Science," 345–346.

born extends to the higher forms of life. I am in the presence of Almighty God; and yet, when a great soul like that tender spirit of our sainted Lincoln, in his early days, with little knowledge but with great thoughtfulness, was troubled by this difficulty, and almost thrown into infidelity by not knowing that the law that there must be two parents is not universal, I am willing to allude, even in such a presence as this, to the latest science concerning miraculous conception.' (Sensation.)"

The old denies the newness of the new

If, however, the old cannot assume the guise of youth, it strives to discredit the new by making it out to be old. Fromundus in his "*Ant-Aristarchus*" pretends that the discovery of Copernicus is only the exploded theory of a Pagan philosopher. The doctrine of evolution is declared to be merely "a rehash of Lucretius." The conclusions of the Higher Critics of the Scriptures are dismissed as an "old heresy" that has been disposed of again and again. The agnosticism of the modern scientific man is assimilated to the Athenian worship of "the Unknown God." The philosophical pessimism of Schopenhauer is waved aside as only a current version of the pessimism of the author of the book of Ecclesiastes. Collectivists are refuted by reciting Aristotle's critique of Plato's communal republic. Extension of state activity is represented as a revival of the régime by which the Incas exploited the subject Peruvians. Contemporary divorce, which is chiefly at the instance of the woman, is identified with ancient divorce, which was at the instance of the man and wrought the degradation of woman.

SUMMARY

It makes a profound difference in the characteristics of a society whether its members imitate in the longitudinal plane or the transverse plane.

There is a swing of the pendulum between the cosmopolitan spirit and the spirit of tradition.

When the spirit of custom rules, every innovation seeks to commend itself by feigning age and pedigree.

When the liberal spirit reigns, every hoary dogma or institution strives to furnish up-to-date reasons and support.

If it cannot do so, it tries to discredit its antagonist by making it out to be old and *passé*.

EXERCISES

1. What doctrines are most helpful to a proselyting religion?
2. Show that in large societies socialization is much more complete if conventionality rules than if custom rules.
3. Contrast the effects of foreign war and of civil war upon the spirit of tradition.
4. What are the disadvantages of the way of deriving popular liberties recommended by Burke?
5. Why is easy amendment better than spurious interpretation as a means of making a written constitution elastic?
6. Should the divorce problem be settled by Biblical texts? If not, what should settle it?
7. Why does lawless love now call itself an "affinity"?

CHAPTER XVI

RATIONAL IMITATION

THE purging of the mind from every kind of prepossession or prestige gives room for either *origination*, or *rational imitation*. Now, origination, *i.e.*, invention or discovery, is so difficult that it will always be the prerogative of the few. In a well-knit society, even those who have the originality to invent find usually that some one has anticipated them, and learn from another what they might in time have found out for themselves. The frequency of nearly simultaneous origination by two or more persons proves how brief is the interval, after the discovery or invention is *ripe*, before it is actually made. This is why nearly every element in our body of culture has been propagated from *one* point. The youthful D'Alembert discovered for himself many theorems already known, but not for long was such genius allowed to run to waste. The ingenious shepherd lad, James Ferguson, who invented a clock, a watch, and a celestial globe, might, if he had stayed with his sheep, have devised many other contrivances already known to mankind. But even he was found and educated, so that, instead of continuing to invent the invented, he enriched his fellow-men with the orrery, the tide dial, and the eclipsareon.

Origination is rare

In *rational imitation* our attitude toward a practice depends in no wise on the prestige or discredit of those who have adopted it, or of the time and place of its origin, but

Attitude of the rational imitator

only on its apparent *fitness*. Likewise our attitude toward a proposition depends solely on its appearance of truth, *i.e.*, its *probability*. The rational imitator is not fascinated by the great man or the crowd. He is impressed neither by antiquity nor by novelty. He is as open to what comes from below him as to what comes from above him in the social hierarchy. He is *conservative* in that he keeps every precious inheritance from the past until he has found something better; he is *radical* in that he goes to the root, instead of judging by mere surfaces. On the one hand, he regards the existing device or institution as a provisional thing that will some day be surpassed; on the other, he knows that not one out of ten innovations that sue for his favor is an improvement on the thing as it is. When the transforming forces are most active and society is in a dynamic condition, he will figure as a "heretic," "upsetter," or "disturber"; in the lull, he will be called "mossback" or "obstructionist." For him, however, social life is always a process. Seeing the bases of society in incessant flux, he realizes that the superstructure must change. He accepts the relativity of our dearest mental furniture, our moral standards, social theories, political philosophies, and party programmes. He distrusts yesterday's thought, not as unsound, but as unfit for to-day's occasions. Most institutions he knows are in the grasp of a current of change which relentlessly antiquates not only the wisdom of the fathers, but even the conclusions of his own youth. Hence, he combats the somnolence that creeps upon us in the thirties, insisting, though the years pass, that it is still forenoon and not too late to think.

The accumulation of changes on the rational principle is *progress;* of utilities, *practical* progress; of truths,

intellectual progress. Moral progress and æsthetic progress do not come about essentially by origination and rational diffusion. Progress in these departments is usually the consequence of material or intellectual advancement. The sparing of captives began as soon as men reached the agricultural stage and were able to set their captives to productive labor. In the Northern states, the abandonment of African slavery seems to have come about in consequence of the general adoption of expensive farm implements which slaves could not be brought to use skilfully or carefully. The improvement in the status of the wife flows from the necessity of making matrimony more attractive to woman, now that so many industrial and professional careers are open to her. That militant ethical opinion which slashes now here, now there, laying low at each stroke some wrong or abuse, is the outcome of improvements in the apparatus of publicity. As instances of a moral advance conditioned by intellectual progress may be cited — the humanization of punishments in consequence of the diffusion of scientific ideas of crime and punishment; the abandonment of judicial torture owing to the psychological demonstration of its futility; the restriction of child labor following upon our fuller knowledge of the bodily and mental growth of children; the introduction of safety appliances in industry after investigations unveiling the vast and bloody tragedy of industrial accidents.

Moral and æsthetic progress hinge on material and intellectual progress

There are certain elements of culture that tend to diffuse by rational imitation, viz., the *practical arts* and the *sciences*. To be sure, in each of these authority is recognized and followed. This could hardly be otherwise in view of the immense advantage of the specialist. But the foundation

Rational imitation admits of reliance on authority

of such authority is not *prestige*, but *past success*. It is perfectly rational to treat as an authority in his line the general who has won every battle, the lawyer who has gained every suit, the physician who has saved every case; on the other hand, to withdraw some of our confidence from the civil engineer when his bridge falls, from the astronomer when his prediction fails.

Rationality in the spread of the practical arts

Two causes can be assigned why rational imitation prevails more in the practical arts than in manners, dress, amusements, or the fine arts.

Competition

1. The spur of competition hastens the triumph of the fittest tool, machine, or process, but not of the fittest garment, ceremony, or sport. Armed with the lever of competition, one progressive man can lift out of the rut the ninety and nine unprogressive men. One dentist practising painless dentistry forces all other dentists. One manufacturer marketing safety bicycles coerces all makers of big-wheel bicycles. One nation arming itself with rifled cannon, compels other nations to throw their smooth-bores on the scrap-heap.

Measurement

2. Exact measurement enables us to discover the better of two practical types — electric or cable cars, natural or creosoted railroad ties, overshot or turbine wheels, Jersey or Durham cows, alfalfa or timothy grass. But there is no means of exactly comparing the recreation afforded by bridge whist with that from diavolo, the fun of base-ball with that of golf, the spell cast by the realist with that cast by the romancer, the thrill from Shelley's poetry with the thrill from Kipling's poetry, the pleasure from a Bouguereau painting with the pleasure from a Monet.

It is owing to this difference that there are "schools"

and "movements" in the fine arts, never in the practical arts. Thus we hear of the Della Cruscans, the Lake School, the Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood, the Symbolists, the Decadents, the Secessionists, the Æsthetes. In music there persist side by side Italian opera and German opera, in literature the romanticism of Scott and Hugo and the realism of Balzac and Tolstoi. A great artist, like Michael Angelo or Wagner, becomes, in spite of himself, the founder of a school, the members of which, having no touchstone of discrimination, copy eagerly his faults as well as his excellences, and, moreover, being without any means of measurement, exaggerate his technique to the pitch of the grotesque. If, by a skilful disposition of lights and shadows on the nude figure, the painter suggests the knotted muscles that go with violent action, his imitators will make their lights higher and their shadows deeper, in the hope of producing even greater effects. If the composer disfigures his work by introducing the *leit motif*, then his followers will sow their compositions with absurd *leit motifs*. All this, because there is no means of assaying masterpieces and parting the gold from the dross. Criticism, to be sure, aspires to appraise by objective and universal standards, so that our acceptance or rejection of art methods or works may be rational; but the standards of one generation of critics are the mockery of the next, so that criticism is, after all, little more than one man's liking or dislike.

The fine arts the sport of prestige

There are two causes why science diffuses in virtue of rational imitation, but not theological, metaphysical, political, or ethical thought.

Rationality in the spread of science

1. The applications of a science in the practical arts test the truth of its doctrines. Thus boring and mining

Practical applications

test geology, practical sanitation tests pathology and bacteriology, synthetic chemistry tests analytical chemistry, while spectrum analysis, telephony, wireless telegraphy, and X-ray applications test the principles of physics.

Verification

2. In science every important statement must be *verifiable.* This it is that distinguishes the fabric of modern science from all previous fabrics, *e.g.*, the *Summa* of Thomas Aquinas. Science is credible, not because the intellectual power of its builders surpasses that of the Alexandrian philosophers or the mediæval Schoolmen, but because of its *method.* Each of its great strides dates from some happy experiment or observation. Torricelli's experiment of balancing thirty-two feet of water against thirty inches of mercury ends "Nature abhors a vacuum." When Newton measured the relative velocities of sound and light, he put a quietus on the argument that we see the lightning before we hear the thunder, "because sight is nobler than hearing." Galileo's detection of Venus's phases with his telescope gave the Ptolemaic system its *coup de grâce.* Foucault's pendulum made visible the earth's rotation. The laboratory study of carbonic acid gas destroyed Agricola's theory that the suffocating gases in mines are "the breath of malignant imps." Franklin's kite ends the vision of God "casting thunderbolts." The finding of half-digested fragments of weaker animals in the fossilized bodies of the carnivora upset Wesley's amiable theory that the carnage now going on among the animals is the result of Adam's sin!

"Thought" the sport of prestige

In consequence of this distinction there are "schools" and "movements" in philosophy, theology, political and ethical "thought," but not in true science. Individual

scientists, like Haeckel or Weismann, may speculate, but science, while appropriating their verifiable discoveries, rejects their speculations. In philosophy, we have the school of Plato and the school of Aristotle, the Realists and the Nominalists, the dualists and the monists. In ethical thought, there are the followers of Tolstoi and the followers of Nietzsche. In political thought, there are the disciples of Rousseau and the partisans of De Maistre, the school of Webster and the school of Calhoun. In social philosophy, we meet with Fourierites and Owenites, St. Simonians and Marxists, autoritarians and anarchists. In all these, the prestige and authority of the great man come into play. But the genuine scientist wins no disciples, founds no school, leaves no personal impress. Nothing is taken on his *ipse dixit*.[1] The obituary notice of him in the journals of his science is cold and impersonal. His *work*, and the singleness of aim, close application, and intellectual power that made possible his work — that is all. Nothing of his personal appearance and daily life, none of the sayings and anecdotes that are lovingly preserved by the disciples of the philosopher or the founder of a religion.

The practice of rational imitation grows and ought to

[1] Kepler's main reasoning as to the existence of a law for cometary movements was right; but his secondary reasoning, that comets move nearly in straight lines, was wrong. His successors verified the former and accepted it, tested the latter and rejected it. Says White: "Very different was this from the theological method. As a rule when there arises a thinker as great in theology as Kepler in science, the whole mass of his conclusions ripens into a dogma. His disciples labor not to test it, but to establish it; and, while, in the Catholic Church it becomes a dogma to be believed or disbelieved, under the penalty of damnation, it becomes in the Protestant Church the basis for one more sect." — "History of the Warfare of Science with Theology," 203.

grow. But its growth may be either *extensive* or *intensive*. In the one case, the practice extends to new layers of the population; in the other, it invades new departments of thought and activity.

The extensive growth of rational imitation

One great aim of all culture-diffusing agencies should be the increasing of the number of those who imitate rationally. Universal instruction, free libraries, high-class periodicals, college settlements, the exercise of the suffrage, women's clubs, experience in voluntary associations, — all can play a part in emancipating people from blind imitation. It is not enough to break the yoke of custom. The radical spirit, coupled with political and social equality but without enlightenment, simply puts mob mind in the place of custom as lord of life. To justify itself democracy must be much more than a political movement, or even a social movement. Its goal is not attained by giving every man a vote, or even an opportunity. It must include a great culture movement aiming to lift all to a plane of discrimination and rational choice. Then, whatever element gains control of society, the Dark Ages can never recur.[1]

[1] Professor Dresslar elicited from 875 California normal school students, four-fifths of whom were young women, 3225 confessions of belief in superstitions. Of the hundreds of distinct superstitions these students were able on demand to recall and put on paper nearly half inspired some belief. What a vast underground sheet of *pseudo*-wisdom seeping down through the centuries by oral transmission! If the semi-educated young people to whom we are presently to commit the teaching of our children are such slaves to the unreason of benighted ancestors, can we wonder at the popular faith in lotteries, luck, mascots, fortune tellers, clairvoyants, occultists, mediums, "divine" healers, quacks, patent medicines, absent treatment, water witching, and the like? Enthusiasts who anticipate intellectual and social regeneration within a generation or two in consequence of our universal education would do

The *intensive* growth of rational imitation means the entrance of science with its verifiable statements into realms ruled hitherto by authority, tradition, or convention. We see it in the substituting of scientific hygiene for transmitted rules of ablution, propriety, and abstinence; of meteorology for empirical weather lore and the guesses of weather "wizards"; of psychiatry for doctrines of witchcraft and demoniac possession; of comparative anthropology for the legend of a "chosen people." An ethics basing its norms on human nature and the nature of the social organization is superseding the alleged commandments of Deity, the precepts of ancient sages, the customs of the fathers, and the edicts of Mrs. Grundy. Sociology, regarding the family as a purely social institution, to be constituted not according to tradition, or ecclesiastical decree, or the intuitions of great writers, but with reference to individual happiness, social welfare, and race interest, promises to end profitless controversies as to whether marriage is a sacrament or a contract; bigoted denunciation and passionate defence of divorce; the "woman's sphere" dogmas; and the appeal to the prescriptive division of labor between husband and wife. The light from child study will guide in matters that have been the football between venerable pedagogic falsehood and sentimental faddism. A scientific economics, acquainted with human nature, the conditions of industriousness, thrift and enterprise, and the laws of group

The intensive growth

Ethics

Sociology

Pedagogy

Economics

well to consider how little of our teaching as yet has the power to build up a rational mental habit, and how thin is the veneer of culture over that great mass of irrational predisposition which in the hour of fear and excitement resumes control of the popular mind and leads on to folly and ruin. — University of California Publications, "Superstition and Education," 1907.

survival, and judging an economic institution not by subjective standards but by the way it tends to work out in the long run, will displace "natural right" dogmas and end the barren age-long controversies over the ethical basis of property, the morality of land ownership, and the rightfulness of interest or inheritance. A jurisprudence embodying a scientific apprehension of society's needs and of the relation of law to society, will thrust aside legal doctrines based on a primitive tradition, a remote code, the "wisdom of our ancestors," or the apocryphal "reasons" offered by the commentators. Comparative politics, coupled with comparative legislation, will render it unnecessary to take as beacon the philosophy of some political sage, a Rousseau or a Burke, a Hamilton or a Jefferson.

Jurisprudence

Comparative politics

The arts as applications of science

In the practical arts, likewise, the blindly imitated is yielding to the reasonable or demonstrated. Each of the arts is, in fact, coming to be applied science. One has but to mark the intimate dependence of the practice of medicine on pathology, of nursing on hygiene, of plant and animal breeding on biology, of brewing on bacteriology, of cooking on chemistry, of fruit raising on horticultural science, and of farming on agricultural science.

SUMMARY

After a mind has been purged from all regard for prestige, imitation proceeds on a rational basis.

The attitude of the rational imitator is that known as the "scientific."

It is not irrational to follow authorities, provided our confidence in them has a rational ground.

The growth and diffusion of the practical arts is largely a rational

process, because they are exposed to competition, and their results admit of measurement.

The fine arts, on the other hand, are subject to mob mind, fad, fashion, tradition, and personal prestige.

Because of its practical applications and its principle of verification, science rises and spreads on rational lines.

Tradition and personal authority are influential, however, in the various departments of "thought."

Rational imitation may grow by reaching more things or by mastering more people.

In origination and the growth of rational imitation lies the hope of progress.

EXERCISES

1. What changes — material and intellectual — are behind the temperance movement? the peace movement? the arts-and-crafts movement?

2. Contrast the unbridled spirit of innovation and social experiment with the scientific attitude toward institutions and proposals.

3. Is the obtrusiveness of personality and temperament in literature, painting, and music a sign of advancement or a mark of backwardness?

4. What is the rational way of ascertaining woman's "sphere"?

5. Why is it vain to debate whether marriage is a sacrament or a contract?

6. Is the wrongfulness of interest settled by showing the interest-taker to be one who "reaps where he has not sown"? Reasons.

7. How can you settle whether a thing is right — by consulting conscience or by consulting physiology, psychology, and sociology?

CHAPTER XVII

INTERFERENCE AND CONFLICT

Two kinds of conflict

LIKE systems of waves in air or water spreading from different centres of disturbance, incompatible forms of thought or feeling or action, as they are progressively propagated outward through space or downward through time, must eventually encounter and interfere with one another. There comes a moment when cuneiform writing, spreading out from the Euphrates Valley, meets and is checked by the triumphant diffusion of the Phœnician characters, parent of all our own writing; when the spreading worship of Christ comes into collision with the expanding worship of Mithras; when Hindu religious myths, beliefs, and practices, peacefully descending through the centuries from father to son, and from pundit to pupil, find their course blocked by a religion that, having completed the conquest of the Occident, is being carried by missionary zeal into the very citadels of Oriental civilization; when coffee, introduced into Europe by the Turks and spreading upward from the Southeast, meets the expanding empire of tea, whose capitals are England and Russia. Such interferences lead to conflict, of which we can distinguish two chief kinds — *silent conflict* and *vocal conflict*, i.e., *discussion*.

Prestige against prestige

Silent conflict is sometimes the struggle of *two prestiges*. The outcome of the competition between the French language and the English in the Egyptian schools has

turned mainly on the relative prestige of France and England in the eyes of the Egyptians. The brows both of Christianity and of Theosophy are white with the hoar of antiquity, and in many minds their conflict will be decided by their comparative prestige. So, in the interference of the styles of costume launched by rival footlight favorites, of the examples of vying social leaders in respect to note-paper or parlor recitals, of the interpretations of Hamlet by great actors (Garrick, Kean, Booth, Irving, Mounet-Sully), of the rowing methods of two champion oarsmen, of the unlike vocalization of two popular singers, the result may hinge entirely on relative personal prestige. Whenever social superiority and subordination are marked, merit is little considered, and it is comparative prestige that is likely to decide the day. Hence, in a hierarchized society, or in the dealings of advanced nations with rude peoples, everything depends on the example set by those looked up to; and all manner of ascendencies flow from that which confers prestige, viz., military and political ascendency. The magnificence of the Czar's coronation, the splendor of the Durbar at Delhi, aids the ascendency of empire over tribal traditions and feudatory native dynasties, and is, therefore, a great procurer of obedience.

Prestige against merit

Again, conflict is sometimes a duel *between a prestige and a merit.* This often is the situation presented when the new collides with the old. The Dyaks of Borneo used to cut straight into a log, the U-chop. When they came into contact with the easier V-chop of the Europeans, they wanted to use it, but their medicine men told them it would anger the gods; so, for a while, they employed the V-chop only when alone in the forest, safe

from observation. So, in the struggle between *suttee* and no-*suttee*, the Chinese bandaged foot and the natural foot, the hour-glass waist and the natural waist, the prestige is all on one side. When we hesitate whether to write "waistcoat" or "vest," "labour" or "labor," the issue lies between precedent and convenience. In our own society, however, novelty is not without a certain prestige, so that the innovation wins the faddists for nothing; but by far the greater number of people can be impressed only by its merits.

The conflict between new and old

The relation of victor and vanquished in such conflicts brings out clearly the fallacy of the recurring notion that the regression or decay of social forms is the counterpart of their progression or growth; the illusion that a style of painting, an industrial process, a language, or a religion, has a natural old age as it has a natural youth. The fact is that a social form spreads like a system of undulations, radiating from one centre, which do not return on themselves unless an obstacle is encountered; or like a living species which expands until the limits of its habitat are reached, and then becomes stable. A species of plant or animal does not die, it is exterminated by some better adapted competitor; a machine or a dogma does not die, it is displaced by some new and superior rival. The Divine Right of Kings, the Verbal Inspiration of the Scriptures, *cujus regio ejus religio*, the Ptolemaic system, and the *laisse faire* policy succumbed, not because they had lost their former congeniality with the human mind, but because they could not compete successfully with certain later modes of thought.

The spread or progress of a practice or belief is usually due to some excellence in that practice or belief. Occa-

sionally the regress is due to the loss of this excellence, *i.e.*, to changes in the social situation which deprive it of its fitness. Thus indissoluble marriage is a misfit as soon as women have become individualized and economically emancipated. The town-meeting plan of government exhibits none of its vaunted merits, once the town has become populous. With the differentiation in the forms of property, the old general property tax becomes a scandal. Generally, however, the decay of a social form is due simply to the encroachments of a successful rival. Sometimes the regress of A is nothing but the obverse of the progress of its substitute B. Thus, the decline curve of stage-coaches is just the growth curve of railroads, turned upside down. So, in the losing battle of sail with steam, of wooden ships with iron ships, of church education with secular education, the graph of the decadence of the one answers to the graph of the progress of the other.

Why the old is vanquished

Finally, the duel between two forms may be decided wholly *on relative merits*. When we hesitate whether to say "telegraph" or "wire," "exposition" or "exhibition," "rubbers" or "overshoes," prestige is not a factor, for the thing in mind is recent. So, the struggle between banjo and accordion, decimal fractions and vulgar fractions, French quotation marks and English quotation marks, sloping handwriting and upright handwriting, cane sugar and beet sugar, the English saddle and the American saddle, is decided essentially upon the basis of comparative excellence.

Merit against merit

Among the means of deciding the silent struggle are *authority*, *persecution*, *example*, *observation*, and *trial*.

Authority refers to the one man, or small body of men,

Settling conflict by authority

having the power to end a struggle summarily. In innumerable minds of the fourth century A.D. the issue between the old faith and the new was settled by the conversion of the Emperor Constantine to Christianity. The will of a few score of men imposed the gold standard on Russia, whereas, in the United States, the matter had to be argued before a jury of thirteen million voters. In one church "Rome speaks," and there is a sudden silence; in another the battle goes on until settled by the vote of an Œcumenical Council or a General Assembly; in a third it continues until the members have made up their minds for one side or the other, and the conflict dies down for lack of fresh material.

For thinkers of a certain school, the intervention of the benevolent autocrat, or the initiative of an enlightened aristocracy is an ideal short-cut to social reform. It seems so easy for the social philosopher to set things right simply by winning over to his ameliorative projects a Frederick the Great or a Napoleon. The fiasco of the reforming Emperor Joseph II of Austria shows, however, what is likely to happen when struggle, instead of agitating the minds of the entire people, is confined to the mind of an autocrat.

The case of Joseph II

"He was penetrated by the characteristic ideas of the eighteenth century as to the duties of an absolute monarch, and began at once to give effect to them in a fearless and almost revolutionary spirit. His first step was to combine the various nationalities subject to him into a single state with thirteen administrative districts. He refused to be crowned king of Hungary, and would not summon the Hungarian diet, insisting that the country should be governed as a province, and causing German to be used as

the official language. Among other reforms he proclaimed the abolition of serfdom, substituted various punishments for the capital penalty, established common tribunals, and issued new codes based on the principle that all citizens are equal before the law. He transferred the censorship of books from the clergy to laymen of liberal sympathies, and granted complete freedom to journalism. He instituted public libraries and observatories, founded a medical college in Vienna, a university in Lemberg, and schools for the middle classes in various parts of the monarchy, and encouraged art by offering prizes in connection with the academy of the plastic arts. Industry and trade he fostered by destroying many monopolies, by aiding in the establishment of new manufactures, by raising Fiume to the position of a free harbor, and by opening the Danube to his subjects from its source to the Black Sea. . . . In 1781 he issued an edict of toleration, granting freedom of worship to all Protestants and to members of the Greek Church; and between 1782 and 1790 about 700 monasteries were closed, the members of religious orders being reduced from 63,000 to 27,000. All these changes were well meant, but the emperor, in the ardor of his philanthropy, shot too far ahead of the prevailing sentiment of his people. Moreover, his good intentions were often rendered fruitless by unskilful or unsympathetic subordinates. In nearly every part of the monarchy discontent soon manifested itself, and some of the inhabitants of Tyrol broke into open rebellion. The Hungarians bitterly resented the suppression of their ancient privileges, and in 1787 the emperor's new institutions led in several districts to a furious conflict between the peasantry and the nobles. The estates of the Austrian Netherlands per-

sistently opposed the execution of his schemes, the clergy being especially active in stirring up popular indignation. . . . In Hungary there was so dangerous an agitation that in January, 1790, Joseph had to undo almost everything he had attempted to accomplish in that country during the previous nine years; he succeeded only in maintaining the decrees by which he had abolished serfdom and established toleration. Thus his last days were rendered miserable by the conviction that his career had been a failure."

Let a conflict be fought out

An abrupt, Jovian intervention is, therefore, not always so beneficent as it promises to be. It is infinitely more trouble to convert a people than to win over a monarch, but the results are more lasting. Though large bodies move slowly, they rarely recoil. The submitting of onward measures to million-headed Demos looks clumsy indeed, and yet it is democratic societies that to-day are the most consistently progressive. So, it may be better for society to rely on its own powers than to be forced ahead by a reforming Numa or Solon. The presence of an authority having the right to decide for all, cuts the nerve of propagandist zeal and interrupts the education of the people. Therefore, better free speech and free press than the enlightened autocrat. That monarch does best who, instead of introducing social reforms offhand, provides those educational agencies that build his people up to the point where they can reform matters for themselves.

Then it does not break out afresh

Experience shows, moreover, that, if struggle goes on to a finish, there is often no root of bitterness left, and no possibility of the resurrection of error. In this country, the fight for public education, for religious freedom,

for separation of church and state, against imprisonment for debt, and against the property qualification of the suffrage went on to a finish, and hence it is impossible to reopen those questions here.

Persecution rarely can settle conflicts

Persecution is another inviting "short-cut" to unanimity; but sometimes it is not so short after all. For persecution interrupts the other processes that are working in your favor. Once resort to violence, and you can no longer persuade. Persecution causes the persecuted to draw together, encourage one another, and associate only with one another. It closes them to the influences of reason and interest that otherwise would work upon them and win them over. Spain's attempt to drive the Moriscos into orthodoxy made them a sullen, disaffected mass which finally had to be deported, to the lasting injury of the country.[1] In Alsace-Lorraine, Germany chose the attractive method of influencing the struggle of German with French. In Schleswig-Holstein, Prussia adopted the coercive method of insuring the victory of German over Danish. The result is progress in the former case, defeat in the latter. The fact is, in all culture struggles, resort to brute force invigorates the thing aimed at. "The blood of the martyrs is the seed of the Church." Antiochus's rash attempt to force Hellenism upon the Jews brought on the Maccabean revolution, and made the Jews impervious to the Greek culture. Latimer's prophecy to Ridley when he was led out to be burned under Bloody Mary, "We shall this day light such a candle in England as shall not soon be put out," is verified in the anti-Catholic bias of England to this day. Russia's ruthless endeavor to drive the Juggernaut car of

[1] Lea, "The Moriscos of Spain."

her civilization over the little peoples — the Esthonians, Letts, Poles, Finns, and Georgians — has been a ghastly failure.

The psychology of martyrdom

It is not that the persecuted *are right.* Martyrdom proves the truth of nothing. Any body of homogeneous people cruelly persecuted for some innocent thing will produce martyrs. If a tyrant commands men who shave to let the beard grow, there will presently arise a little fanatical sect of "shavers," and here and there one will burn at the stake rather than give up the razor. The martyr spirit, then, is a mark not of *truth*, but of *collective reaction.* This is why religious persecution, though it sometimes succeeds (Spain, Bohemia, France, the extirpation of Buddhism in Hindustan), is always a harder task than the persecutor anticipated. Moreover, he runs the terrible risk of interfering on the wrong side after all. The tragic consequences of the Church's persecution of Roger Bacon are thus stated by White:[1] —

"Sad is it to think of what this great man might have given to the world had ecclesiasticism allowed the gift. He held the key of treasures which would have freed mankind from ages of error and misery. With his discoveries as a basis, with his method as a guide, what might not the world have gained! Nor was the wrong done to that age alone; it was done to this age also. The nineteenth century was robbed at the same time with the thirteenth. But for that interference with science the nineteenth century would be enjoying discoveries which will not be reached before the twentieth century, and even after it. Thousands of precious lives shall be lost, tens of

[1] "History of the Warfare of Science with Theology in Christendom," I, 390.

thousands shall suffer discomfort, privation, sickness, poverty, ignorance, for lack of discoveries and methods which, but for this mistaken dealing with Roger Bacon and his compeers, would now be blessing the earth.

"In two recent years sixty thousand children died in England and in Wales of scarlet fever; probably quite as many died in the United States. Had not Bacon been hindered, we should have had in our hands by this time the means to save two-thirds of these victims; and the same is true of typhoid, typhus, cholera, and that great class of diseases of whose physical causes science is just beginning to get an inkling. Put together all the efforts of all the atheists who have ever lived, and they have not done so much harm to Christianity and the world as has been done by the narrow-minded, conscientious men who persecuted Roger Bacon, and closed the path which he gave his life to open."

Example, Observation, Trial. — A farmer may favor one of two rival reapers, (1) because leading farmers champion and introduce it, (2) because observation of the experience of others shows its superiority, or (3) because he has tried both and found it the better. These three are the leading factors in silent struggles, whether of two models of bicycle, two styles of house decoration, two types of sport, two standards of journalism, or two ideals of manhood.

Silent conflict tends to break out into discussion

There is, however, a tendency for silent struggle to become vocal. Rival authorities appeal to *argument;* the persecutor uses *reasons* as more effective with some than force; example is reënforced by *persuasion;* observation leads to formal *comparison; calculation* takes the place of trial. The rival *arguments, reasons, persuasives, comparisons,* and *calculations* amount to discussion.

SUMMARY

Incompatible beliefs or practices propagated from different points in time or space eventually come into conflict with each other.

The conflict may be either of two types — *silent conflict* or *discussion*.

Silent conflict presents three cases — prestige against prestige, prestige against merit, merit against merit.

The regress of a belief or practice is not the reverse of its previous progress, but the obverse of the progress of its successful rival.

Possible factors in the issue of a silent conflict are authority, persecution, example, observation, and trial.

Authority may decide conflict speedily, but its settlement is not always lasting.

Persecution is costly and checks the milder influences that help to settle a conflict.

Silent conflict tends to pass over into discussion.

EXERCISES

1. Show the social psychology under the maxim, "Nothing succeeds like success."

2. Show that conflict — whether silent or vocal — between prestiges, tends to broaden out; between merits, tends to narrow down.

3. What is the chief cause of the death of institutions in a dynamic society? In a progressive society?

4. Is there more place for authority in settling public questions than in settling private questions?

5. Ought the conflict between types of water filtration or sewage disposal or armor plate to be settled by the voters or by authority? What class of public questions should be settled by the voters?

6. Is it persecution to punish a man for relying on Christian Science or "absent treatment" when his wife or his child is seriously ill?

7. Is it wrong to punish those who persist in folly that hurts only themselves, or merely inexpedient?

CHAPTER XVIII

DISCUSSION

Discussion an abbreviator of conflict

SOMETIMES a struggle can be summarily closed by invoking some authority acknowledged by both sides; for example, the Pope on dogma, Tyndall on spontaneous generation, the Prince of Wales on some point of etiquette. Oftener, however, it is discussion that settles a struggle when it reaches an acute stage. For discussion *hurries conflicts to a conclusion.* Sixty years ago the silent struggle between man and woman became vocal, and the result has been a hasty removal of many barriers that hemmed in woman, and a rapid improvement in her social position. In the United States, African slavery would, no doubt, have died out in time by the silent operation of economic and moral forces, but discussion greatly hastened its end. Since, about a generation ago, a few bold spirits began to ask "Why?" in public, the religious *tabu* on theatre, dancing, card-playing, secular literature and art, has loosened more than in all the previous interval since the Puritan Commonwealth. So, the disapproval of drinking has developed more in the seventy years since Father Mathew began the temperance agitation, than in the two centuries before. Hence, *all losing sides dread discussion,* for it shortens their lease of life. Silence is for them a kind of reprieve. Their instinct, then, is to choke off discussion at all hazards. The geocentrists got the Papal Index for nearly two hundred years to forbid

Doomed causes hate discussion

the faithful from reading "all books which affirm the motion of the earth." The Index of the books absolutism forbids to be printed or circulated in Russia reads like a list of the monumental works of modern research and thought. The tottering Old Régime in France persecuted and hounded the Encyclopedists. The German monarchists long sought to withstand the rising tide of social democracy with a "law of associations and meetings." The French militarists endeavored to gag discussion of the Dreyfus case. In the lower South after 1835 all open criticism of slavery was prohibited, and on the border desperate means were taken to silence the abolitionists.[1] In the state of Delaware and in the city of Detroit frantic attempts have been made by rich tax-dodgers to throttle single-tax speakers.

Curative power of free discussion

Conversely, the side that feels sure of its case does not persecute. Therefore it is safe to infer that the cause which courts publicity and discussion has time on its side, whereas the cause that ducks, slinks, or applies the gag,

[1] The result is stated by Hart: "Nothing could have been more favorable to the abolitionists than this succession of outbreaks, which flashed public attention upon Garrison, Birney, and Lovejoy, and placed their personal character in the strongest contrast to the means employed to silence them. Mob violence emphasized the fact that the abolitionists were not acting contrary to law, and it aroused the fighting spirit of thousands of people who knew very little about the controversy except that the abolitionists had something to say so important that it must be prevented by violence and murder." — "Slavery and Abolition," 249.

"To assure the world that slavery was God-given, hallowed by the experience of mankind, enjoined by Scripture, the foundation of republican government, the source of all Southern blessings — and then to insist that it could be overthrown by the mere wind of doctrine — was a confession that it was really unstable and iniquitous. No great institution contributing to human enlightenment has ever needed to be protected by silence." — *Ibid.*, 312. See also 234–237.

ought to rest under suspicion. Seeing that no great wrong can long survive open discussion, we may characterize free speech, free assemblage, and free press as *the rights preservative of all rights*. Safeguard these fundamentals, and the rest must come. This is why free government, although it is by no means the same thing as popular government, is usually the vestibule to it. When discussion is free, all use of violence to change the *personnel* or the form of government is criminal, seeing that a peaceful way lies open to the reformer. When, on the other hand, brute force is employed to prevent an unhappy people from organizing their minds into that spiritual structure we call public opinion, they have as much right to strike out destructively as the householder who wakes to find the fingers of a burglar closing on his throat.

Growing copiousness of discussion

Discussion presupposes mental contact, hence is favored by modern facilities for communication, — press, telegraph, cheap travel, cheap books, free libraries, etc. These substitute discussion of principles and policies for petty gossip, and attention to general concerns for attention to private, family, or neighborhood concerns. There is to-day a far greater amount of fructifying discussion than ever before, and it touches more topics, plays over more of life. That "nowadays no subject is sacred" means that every belief, practice, and institution is called upon to justify itself. Male sexual license, the indissoluble marriage, the marriage bond itself, are required to furnish reasons. It is coming to be recognized that there is nothing of concern to human beings which may not profitably be discussed in the right spirit, by the right persons, at the right time. This is why the downfall of

an effete dogma, the abandonment of an unwise policy, a harmful practice, a vicious custom, or a wasteful process, is prompter now than ever before. This explains the miracles of transformation we witness in human relations and arrangements. It is because that great radical, Discussion, invades every department of life and hurries to a close long-smouldering conflicts, that ours is such a revolutionary epoch. "Age of endless talk," sneers the cynic, forgetting that, but for the copious talk and print, it could not be an age of reason and redress. Well has it been said: —

Talk is the great changer of opinion

"It is safe to suppose that one-half of the talk of the world on subjects of general interest is waste. But the other half certainly tells. We know this from the change in ideas from generation to generation. We see that opinions which at one time everybody held became absurd in the course of half a century, — opinions about religion and morals and manners and government. Nearly every man of my age can recall old opinions of his own, on subjects of general interest, which he once thought highly respectable, and which he is now almost ashamed of having ever held. He does not remember when he changed them, or why, but somehow they have passed away from him. In communities these changes are often very striking. The transformation, for instance, of the England of Cromwell into the England of Queen Anne, or of the New England of Cotton Mather into the New England of Theodore Parker and Emerson, was very extraordinary, but it would be very difficult to say in detail what brought it about, or when it began. Lecky has some curious observations, in his 'History of Rationalism,' on these silent changes in new beliefs apropos of

the disappearance of the belief in witchcraft. Nobody could say what had swept it away, but it appeared that in a certain year people were ready to burn old women as witches, and a few years later were ready to laugh at or pity any one who thought old women could be witches. 'At one period,' says he, 'we find every one disposed to believe in witches; at a later period we find this predisposition has silently passed away.' The belief in witchcraft may perhaps be considered a somewhat violent illustration, like the change in public opinion about slavery in this country. But there can be no doubt that it is talk — somebody's, anybody's, everybody's talk — by which these changes are wrought, by which each generation comes to feel and think differently from its predecessor. No one ever talks freely about anything without contributing something, let it be ever so little, to the unseen forces which carry the race on to its final destiny. Even if he does not make a positive impression, he counteracts or modifies some other impression, or sets in motion some train of ideas in some one else, which helps to change the face of the world. So I shall, in disregard of the great laudation of silence which filled the earth in the days of Carlyle, say that one of the functions of an educated man is to talk, and, of course, he should try to talk wisely." [1]

When controversy is fruitful

In areas where, after all, *feeling* or *instinct*, not *reason*, decides, discussion can do little to accelerate the issue. *De gustibus non est disputandum.* Barren are discussions of Italian opera and German opera, æstheticism, Whitman's poetry, Whistler's "arrangements," race amalgamation. For here the matter is one of taste, and a common basis is lacking. The best type of discussion is that

[1] Godkin, "Problems of Modern Democracy," 221–224.

between parties who agree as to ends and differ only as to means, because we have feelings about ends but are cold-blooded in choosing means. "Shall we by law prohibit child labor?" Compare two friends of children discussing this, one a believer in state action, the other a believer in trade union action, with the discussion of it between a philanthropist and a factory owner. "Shall we retain the Philippines?" Compare discussion of this between two men whose aim is the welfare of the natives, with the discussion between one of these men and an exploiter whose maxim is, "The Philippines for the Americans!" "Shall we announce from the pulpit the results of the Higher Criticism?" yields a very different discussion between two lovers of truth than between one who cares only for truth and one who cares only for dogma. "Shall we adopt the direct primary?" is a much more fertile topic if discussed by two friends of good government than if discussed by a friend of good government and a corrupt boss. When means or methods are in question, we appeal to the judgment; when ends are in question, we aim at the feelings. Thus, the prohibitionist tries to inspire disgust for the saloon. His opponent endeavors to arouse resentment against "interference with personal liberty."

When controversy is profitless

Without a common basis discussion becomes wrangling, the effort not to win over opponents, but to win neutrals. Hence, ridicule and vilification, coining of epithets, catch phrases, and slogans. Hence, appeals to passion and prejudice, such as "Do you want your daughter to marry a nigger?" "Vote as you shot — against the South!" "Vote for the Liberal and you vote for the Boer!" "Who will haul down the flag?" "God-

less" public schools! "Freedom of contract." "Dreyfusards." "Little Englanders." An inventory of the stock appeals of a political campaign shows how inapt is the phrase "campaign of education." The really profitable discussion of political questions is that which occurs before the subsidized newspapers and the hired spellbinders have filled the air with dust.

Theory of the theological polemic

The reason why theological controversy so fatally descends into polemic is that *all discussion of things supernal contains the seeds of degeneration.* It is owing to this that we hear of an *odium theologicum*, but not of an *odium scientificum.* Theologians are certainly as just and kindly men as scientists, but after they have marshalled in vain their texts and their reasonings, they have nothing else to appeal to. When the scientist has exhausted his ammunition without effect, he can go after fresh evidence. It is not easy to settle by observation the question of the open Polar Sea, the sources of the Nile, or the canals on Mars; but it is child's play compared with getting decisive facts on the question of the nature of the Godhead, or the future state of unbaptized infants. Compare the battle between trans-substantiationists and con-substantiationists, *homo-ousians* and *homoi-ousians*, with the debate between the Neo-Lamarckians and the Neo-Darwinians. When the naturalists found they could not decide the question without more facts, they declared a truce and went to cutting off the tails of successive generations of mice!

The path of degeneration of discussion

Sometimes, as in the struggle between two prejudices, tastes, or prestiges, both disputants wrangle; but, when a merit is pitted against a prestige or a sentiment, one side argues while the other vituperates. This is plainly

seen in the debates on the social recognition of negroes, the recognition of the labor unions, the regulation of corporations, the taxation of site values, and women suffrage. In the discussing of vivisection, compulsory vaccination, the segregation of vice, the legal control of prostitution, the census-taking of disease, etc., one side appeals to reason, the other to sentiment. Beyond wrangling lie the appeals that rally the partisans of either side, and the passing of the struggle from the realm of social psychology into that of pugilistics.[1]

[1] The fatal trend is shown in "Truthful James's" account of the row "That broke up our Society upon the Stanislow."

"Now nothing could be finer or more beautiful to see
Than the first six months' proceedings of that same Society,
Till Brown of Calaveras brought a lot of fossil bones
That he found within a tunnel near the tenement of Jones.

"Then Brown he read a paper, and he reconstructed there,
From those same bones, an animal that was extremely rare;
And Jones then asked the Chair for a suspension of the rules,
Till he could prove that those same bones was one of his lost mules.

"Then Brown he smiled a bitter smile, and said he was at fault,
It seemed he had been trespassing on Jones's family vault;
He was a most sarcastic man, this quiet Mr. Brown,
And on several occasions he had cleaned out the town.

"Now I hold it is not decent for a scientific gent
To say another is an ass, — at least, to all intent;
Nor should the individual who happens to be meant
Reply by heaving rocks at him, to any great extent.

"Then Abner Dean of Angel's raised a point of order, when
A chunk of old red sandstone took him in the abdomen,
And he smiled a kind of sickly smile, and curled up on the floor,
And the subsequent proceedings interested him no more.

"For, in less time than I write it, every member did engage
In a warfare with the remnants of the palæozoic age;
And the way they heaved those fossils in their anger was a sin,
Till the skull of an old mammoth caved the head of Thompson in."

— Bret Harte, "Poems."

Breaking up of social lumps hastens assimilation

The efficacy of discussion in abbreviating conflicts depends on the access of people to its influence. When folks are matted together into impermeable strata, classes, or communities, the ferment of discussion operates only on the exterior of the mass. Chinatown, French Canada, Liberia, the Ghetto, the slums, the Black Belt in the South, the Hungarian districts in Pennsylvania, the Mennonite villages in North Dakota, — these reveal what happens when social islands are formed. As pulverizing a lump of lime hastens its slaking, as comminuting food aids digestion, as splintering wood accelerates its combustion, so there is a speedier termination of the conflict between the peculiar and the general when social lumps are broken up. Such has been the effect of stirring a Gentile leaven through the Mormon communities. Outside the cotton belt, slavery brought the white and black races into close personal contact and hastened the civilizing of the blacks. Since emancipation there has been a marked tendency to segregate,[1] resulting in spots in conditions almost Liberian. The French Canadian is inaccessible to modern ideas at home, but he succumbs in the Massachusetts factory town where discussion and example have a fair chance at him. The effects of a trade union in detaching the immigrant from his clan organizations and exposing him to the play of Americanizing influences is thus set forth by Colonel Wright:[2] "In every trade union, however conservative, there are members who will occasionally get the floor and advise their hearers to vote high wages and shorter hours at the ballot box. As the groups

The trade union as Americanizer of the immigrant

[1] See "America's Race Problems," 115, 123–124, 128, 136–137.

[2] U. S. Bulletin of Labor, January, 1905, "The Influence of Trade Unions on Immigrants," 6.

of Slovaks gather around after the business is over to have these things explained to them, many get their first real idea of what the ballot and election day mean, and the relation of these to the Government itself. In their own home countries the two essential, if not only, elements of the peasant and agricultural laborer's mind is to believe and obey, or follow. Advantage is taken of this fact here by clan politicians, as well as the clan leader in every department. Once the leader can make these people believe in him, he thinks for the entire group, and insists that their duty consists in following his lead implicitly. Necessarily, the trade union, in order to get them to break away from the leader that opposed the union on industrial lines, would be compelled to urge them to consider their own personal and group interests as wage workers; to think and act for themselves along lines where they know the real conditions better than any one else, and certainly better than their leader in a child insurance society, or something else as remote. Here, too, are the first germs of what may be called departmental thinking implanted in their minds — that is, that while a leader may be worthy of their confidence in one thing, it does not necessarily follow that he is so in some other class of interests.

"It is doubtful if any organization other than a trade union could accomplish these things, for only the bread-and-butter necessity would be potent enough as an influence to bring these people out of the fixed forms and crystallizations of life into which they have been compressed. Certain it is that no other organization is attempting to do this work, at least not by amalgamation, which is the only way assimilation can be secured among these various foreign elements. The drawing of these people away from

their petty clique leaders and getting them to think for themselves upon one line of topics, namely, the industrial conditions and the importance of trade organization, result in a mental uplift. The only way they can pull a Slovak away from his leader is to pull him up until he has gotten above his leader along the lines of thought they are working on."

Three phases of vocal conflict

In discussion three phases of conflict may be observed, corresponding to the possible relations between two incompatible beliefs or desires.[1]

1. *A denies or opposes B, but B does not deny or oppose A.* — This is seen when A is an established dogma or institution, B an innovation. The book that gave the world the heliocentric theory crept forth with a grovelling preface to the effect that Copernicus had propounded the doctrine of the earth's movement not as a fact, but as a hypothesis! Galileo sought to reconcile the discoveries of his telescope with the Scriptures, and when he brought out his *Dialogo* signed a stultifying preface in which the Copernican theory was virtually exhibited as a play of the imagination. Boscovich, obedient Jesuit that he was, said: "I regard the earth as immovable; nevertheless for simplicity in explanation I will argue as if the earth moves; for it is proved that of the two hypotheses the appearances favor this idea." The theologians, on the other hand, exaggerated the incompatibility of heliocentrism with their system. They declared that the former "vitiates the whole Christian plan of salvation," "casts suspicion on the doctrine of the incarnation," "tends toward infidelity," "is of all heresies the most abominable, the most pernicious, the most scandalous. Argument against the immortality

[1] See Tarde, "La logique sociale," 138–141.

of the soul, the existence of God, and the incarnation, should be tolerated sooner than an argument to prove that the earth moves." The author was denounced as "heretic," "infidel," and "atheist." In the same spirit the theologian denounces early geology as "infidel," while geology professes no antagonism whatever to the Church. The mass of belief behind infant science is so little that priests, eager to crush science while it is yet weak, accentuate the contradiction between them; while science, conscious of its weakness, avoids conflict and pleads only to be let alone. The same attitude is seen in certain of the early Fathers who sought to propitiate their Pagan neighbors by emphasizing the agreements between Greek Philosophy and the Christian belief. So the "rights of man" professed nothing subversive at first; while the privileged orders instantly declared war on them. So new tastes timidly introduce themselves alongside the older needs; but conservatives promptly oppose "the new-fangled foreign luxuries" as Cato denounced Greek works of art and Asiatic refinements.

2. *A and B mutually deny and oppose one another.*— This is the phase of fiercest contention, when the new feels strong enough to throw off the mask and declare its downright incompatibility with the old. Then Luther succeeds Erasmus; Le Place, Galileo; Voltaire, Descartes; Strauss, Reimarus; Huxley, Darwin; and Danton, Mirabeau. Astronomy, finding a current in its favor, no longer pretends to furnish confirmation for dogmas which respond only with anathemas. Science declares war on the traditional cosmogony and boldly admits that theology and science cannot be reconciled. So democracy takes the field against privilege, and labor

avows that it aims at nothing less than securing for the laborer "the whole produce."

3. *A does not deny or oppose B, but B denies or opposes A.* — The confidence in the methods of science at last becomes so great that theology no longer dares accentuate its contradiction. It strives to compromise with science, clutches eagerly at "scientific" proofs,[1] and seeks to rebuild its shattered dogmas in the region as yet unsubdued by advancing science. Divines eagerly "reconcile" Genesis and Geology, but geologists go on with their work careless whether the two are reconciled or not. Theology forms all sorts of amalgam with science; but science declines even to discuss, and passes by in silent scorn the horde of bastard theories. So, nowadays, selfish privilege no longer openly opposes democracy, but champions "imperialism." Capitalism no longer flouts the demand for legislation to protect labor, but pleads "constitutional limitations." Men no longer denounce woman as "strong-minded" and "unwomanly" when she asks for equal opportunities, but profess that the hampering restrictions upon her are in the interest of woman herself!

Discussion undergoes an evolution

Such are the phases to be noticed in a particular logical duel. But the product of one of these duels becomes the starting-point of the next, so that there is a certain *evolution of discussion* to be discerned in the history of a civi-

[1] Speaking of Hoffmann's "scientific" theory of the action of the devil in causing Job's boils, White says: "This effort at a *quasi*-scientific explanation which should satisfy the theological spirit, comical as it at first seems, is really worthy of serious notice, because it must be considered as the beginning of that inevitable effort at compromise which we see in the history of every science when it begins to appear triumphant." — *Op. cit.* II, 62.

lization. The cause and course of this evolution cannot be better stated than in the words of Tarde:[1] —

"It is only after the mental discussion between contradictory ideas within the same mind has ended, that any verbal discussion is possible between two men who have solved the question differently. Similarly, if verbal, written, or printed discussions between groups of men, and groups that are ever widening, take the place of verbal discussion between two men, it is because the more limited discussion has been brought to an end by some relative and temporary agreement, or some sort of unanimity. These groups are first split up into an endless multitude of little coteries, clans, churches, forums, and schools, which combat one another; but at length, after many polemics, they are welded into a very small number of great parties, religions, parliamentary groups, schools of philosophy, and schools of art, which engage one another in mortal combat. Was it not thus that the Catholic faith became gradually established? In the first two or three centuries of the Church's history, countless discussions, always intense and often bloody, were waged among the members of each local church, ending in their agreeing upon a creed; but this creed, disagreeing in certain particulars with those of neighboring churches, gave rise to conferences and provincial councils, which solved the difficulties, excepting that they occasionally disagreed with one another, and were forced to carry their disputes higher up, to national or œcumenical councils. . . . The unity of legal codes has long since been accomplished in an analogous manner: countless local customs have arisen, settling thousands of individual discussions concerning

[1] "Social Laws," 125–132 *passim*.

rights (though not all, as the court records prove); these customs, coming into conflict with one another, have been reconciled by certain sectional customs, which have finally been replaced by uniform legislation. The unity of science, operating slowly over a wide field, through a succession of discussions, alternately settled and reopened, among scientists and scientific schools, would give rise to similar reflections. . . .

The secular achievements of discussion

"The objection may possibly be raised that as races become more civilized they tend more and more to discussion, and that, far from taking the place of private discussion, our publi discussions, polemics of the press, and parliamentary debates only add fuel to them. But such an objection would be without force. For if savages and barbarians discuss little (which is fortunate, since most of their discussions degenerate into quarrels and combats), it is because they scarcely speak or think at all. When we consider the very small number of their ideas, we ought to be surprised that they clash so often, relatively speaking; and we should marvel to find men with so few different interests so quarrelsome. On the other hand, a thing which we ought to wonder at, but which we scarcely notice, as a matter of fact, is this: that in our own civilized cities, despite the great current of ideas sweeping over us in conversation and reading, there are, on the whole, so few discussions, and these so lacking in warmth. We should be amazed to find that men who think and talk so much contradict one another so seldom, to see that they accomplish so much and clash so little; just as we should wonder at seeing so few carriage accidents in our streets, which are so animated and crowded, or at seeing so few wars break out in this era of complex and far-reaching

international relations. What is it, then, that has brought us into agreement on so many points? It is the three great productions that have been gradually wrought out by centuries of discussion; namely, Religion, Jurisprudence, and Science. . . .

Law of development of discussion

"To sum up. The strife of opposition in human society, in its three principal forms — war, competition, and discussion — proves obedient to one and the same law of development through ever widening areas of temporary pacification, alternating with renewals of discord more centrally organized and on a larger scale, and leading up to a final, at least partial, agreement."

SUMMARY

Discussion is the illuminating flame into which smouldering conflicts burst.

All losing sides dread discussion and try to stamp it out.

A people that enjoys free discussion is likely to conquer all the other freedoms it can profitably use.

Discussion is sterile in matters that do not admit of being decided by the reason.

It is profitless when the appeal is to passion and prejudice rather than to reason.

There is a well-marked path by which intellectual battle descends into physical collision.

Social lumps cannot become incandescent in the flame of discussion till they are broken up.

With respect to the degree of aggressiveness of the combatants the conflict between new and old presents three phases.

Discussion is subject to the same law of development as the other forms of opposition in society.

EXERCISES

1. Why is discussion able to "hurry conflicts to a conclusion"?

2. What are the rules to be observed in order that discussion shall be enlightening and fruitful?

3. If two elements in a group differ as to ends and neither can influence the other in discussion, by what means can they be brought to abide peacefully together?

4. Show that the battle of new truth is sometimes against organized dogmatism's desire to limit knowledge, sometimes against organized conservatism's desire to limit action.

5. Compare the methods of these foes of new truth: —

   a. The bigotry of the ignorant.

   b. The impatience of the temperamental conservatives.

   c. The alarmed self-interest of crafts, professions, or classes "in danger to be set at nought."

CHAPTER XIX

THE RESULTS OF CONFLICT

Certain conflicts continue because people differ in nature

THE outcome of the duel between rival culture elements may be various. Some struggles last indefinitely *because of inborn differences between human beings.* This is akin to the unceasing warfare between highlanders and lowlanders, or between nomads and sedentary populations, as in Arabia. Thus, it is likely that the great rival types of diet, that with sugar and that of sour, heavy foods in association with liquor, will persist because they correspond to differences of palate. Vowel languages and consonant languages seem to go with contrasted types of race psychology, and it is little likely that one group will finally replace the other. So long as one kind of man strives to rid himself of risk, while another type welcomes risk as a relish and a stimulus, the feud between gambling and anti-gambling will continue. It is not likely that the Presbyterian Church will in the end absorb all the Methodists or the Methodist Church absorb all the Presbyterians, seeing that Presbyterian intellectualism and Methodist emotionalism appeal to different temperaments, and each is certain to find a following. So, in ethical opinion, one type of man leans toward the justice of the Old Testament, while another type is attracted by the brotherly love of the New Testament.

Or because people are born young

Or, the struggle may continue *because it is a duel between an illusion and a paradox.* The world is round but seems flat, moves but seems stationary. Each new generation is

staggered at this dilemma, and, however early or impressively we teach the doctrine of heliocentrism, there is a brief struggle in the pupil's mind between the authority of the text-book and the evidence of his senses. Now, in just the same way, the conflict between self-indulgence and temperance is always breaking out afresh, because it is a paradox to say that the way to be happy is to quit when you still want more. The illusion of Epicureanism fights always with the paradox of Stoicism, for what seems more absurd on its face than weeding out your desires instead of trying to gratify them all? In the reform of public morals the champions of physical force never surrender to the believers in moral suasion, for what looks more foolish than improving the conduct of men by the tedious method of persuasion when you can threaten them with the mailed fist? It is because the path of life is so thickset with these pitfalls of illusion that it is necessary to maintain a distinct profession — the clergy — to teach people the beneficent moral paradoxes that save them from these pitfalls.

In the second place, struggles may terminate; but here we can distinguish three cases.

Conflicts may end by the extinction of one side by the other

In the first case, *one side is silenced or convinced.* This can be compared to a warfare resulting in the extermination of one belligerent by the other. In silent conflict the use of the preposition has triumphed over the declension ending of the noun and the use of the auxiliary verb over the inflection ending of the verb. Short hair for men has triumphed over long hair; and for the women of the Germanic peoples, the flowing dress of southern Europe has prevailed over the close-fitting dress congenial to the northern races. Thus have been exterminated armor,

knee-breeches, the spinning-wheel, the morality play, the Christmas carol. In the sphere of vocal conflict there is the victory of the principle of public trial, of equality of all before the law, of the freedom of the press, of religious toleration; the utter extermination of astrology, mesmerism, the doctrine of "signatures," the "special creation" hypothesis, the "chosen people" dogma, the doctrine of Divine Right, the policy of free banking, the practice of judicial torture, the principle of imprisonment for debt.

Or by their coming together on a middle ground

In the second case, the struggle ends *because a middle ground is found upon which both parties can stand.* This is analogous to the warfare ending in the assimilation and amalgamation of the combatants. The ancient duel between fatalism and free will terminates in the acceptance of the scientific determinism which insists that every volition must have its cause in the self, yet recognizes no decree of an outside fate, and admits that the self that wills may be a purified self wrought out by a ceaseless endeavor to realize a personal ideal. The battle between centralization and local government dies down in the general recognition of the fact that the nature of the particular function decides whether it can best be discharged by a local unit, or ought to be passed up to the general government. The controversy between romanticists and naturalists issues in the agreement that, while the writer must treat his material in strict fidelity to real life, he has an infinite field to choose his material from, and he has no excuse for producing a work that is repulsive or demoralizing. In political economy the rivalry between the abstinence and the productivity theories of interest ends in the recognition that two reasons are as necessary to a theory of interest as two blades to a pair of scissors; that the reluctance to

save causes interest to be demanded for the use of capital, and the productivity of that capital enables the interest to be paid. The fight between natural science and the ancient classics for the dominant place in the college curriculum is quieted by bringing to the front a third group, the social sciences (history, civics, economics, sociology), which contribute a certain discipline neither of the other groups can impart.

Or by a partition of territory

In the third case, the struggle ends *because specialization takes place.* This is akin to warfare that terminates by partition of territory between the parties. In the competition between sail and steam it is found that wind power is still the cheapest agency for moving coarse, slow freight. Once it was supposed that the locomotive would completely oust the stage-coach; but there are sixty-odd stage routes maintained to-day in the state of California, and the stage-coach is still by far the cheapest method of transporting a small number of passengers over a mountain route. Far from being vanquished by the railroad, the inland waterway finds in the moving of heavy freight, like stone, coal, lumber, and brick, a field of usefulness in which it is perfectly able to hold its own. Likewise, in the competition between steam power and water power, hard coal and soft coal, large industry and small industry, steam railroad and electric interurban, it is finally discovered that, instead of fighting to the death, each of the rivals has a field in which it is secure from the pursuit of the other. Only the common border of these two fields is debatable land. The interference between "admittance" and "admission" ends when one is used for the act of letting in, the other for permission to come in. The clash between "visit" and "visitation" is settled when the latter

term is reserved for the more formal and official act. In vocal conflict we see the long rivalry between the patriarchal and the contract theories of social genesis die away as one is seen to hold for the *genetic* grouping, the other for the *congregate* grouping. The battle between intuitionism and utilitarianism ends as soon as the theory of evolution makes it clear that, on the one hand, natural selection will fix in human nature other-regarding impulses; on the other hand, that such impulses can refer only to conduct promoting the survival of the social group or the species. Evolution, likewise, divides the honors between optimism and pessimism by insisting with the optimists that the processes of adaptation tend continually to bring the species into harmony with its environment, and admitting with the pessimists that these processes are so slow that men may be very poorly fitted to be happy amid the artificial conditions imposed by the growth of their numbers and their wants.

No question is settled till it is settled right

Sometimes the division is unscientific, and later on the discussion breaks out again. Is the Bible errant or inerrant? Solved by declaring it to be infallible for religious truth. But the progress of the Higher Criticism seems to make this distinction no longer tenable. The struggle between Church and State appeared to be settled by the ingenious distinction between "temporal" and "spiritual" power. Let the State deal with the body, the Church with the soul. But this demarcation no longer serves when the State confronts such problems as the civil control of marriage, the freedom of the press, the care of dependents, and the promotion of education. So, the slavery compromises in the Federal Constitution, and the acts of Congress finally proved unable to repress conflict, and men

came to realize that "the Union cannot endure half slave and half free."

SUMMARY

Not all duels between rival elements of culture terminate.

Some persist because society always includes great diversities of taste, temperament, and mental habit.

Others persist because experience establishes some truths which seem paradoxical to the young.

When duels terminate they end in three different ways.

Some end because one side is annihilated by the other.

Some end because a more comprehensive principle or policy is found which includes and supersedes them both.

Finally, some end because each side has found a position from which it cannot be dislodged.

EXERCISES

1. Why is it that almost invariably truth or wisdom is found to be with neither extremist in a controversy but somewhere between the extremists?

2. Why is a law or institution apt to be the offspring of a compromise; a reigning belief, moral standard or personal ideal, the survivor of a logical duel?

3. Show that some institutions — *e.g.*, the jury system — are subject to endless controversy because their faults lie nearer the surface than their merits.

4. Show that some discussions run on because the ulterior consequences of a policy — say outdoor poor relief — contradict its immediate results, or because its advantages — say the institutional care of children — admit of readier formulation than its disadvantages.

5. Show that some conflicts are protracted because one side can state its case more freely than the other — *e.g.*, indissoluble marriage *vs.* divorce.

CHAPTER XX

UNION AND ACCUMULATION[1]

As culture grows the conflicts between new and old become more acute

ALTERNATIVE to the advance of culture by conflict and substitution is advance by *union and accumulation.* This is, in fact, the prior process. Accumulation precedes substitution, since there can be no replacement until there has been occupancy. For instance, no struggle between new and old can occur until some progress has been made. Then the answers already given to questions block the way to better solutions, and conflict ensues. Early religious thinking issued in myths rather than dogmas, and, since there was room for all of them, they did not interfere. Early observations on natural phenomena dispelled darkness rather than disproved errors. Not until a rank growth of speculations had sprung up was it necessary to conduct a vast discussion in order to overthrow a Ptolemaic system, a sacred cosmology, or a theory of the special creation of species. "When the art of war first arose, every new weapon or drill or tactic could be added to those already in existence, whereas, in our own day it is seldom that a new engine of war or a new military regulation does not have to battle for some time with others which its introduction has rendered useless. In the beginnings of industry, in its pastoral and agricultural forms, every newly cultivated plant and every newly domesticated animal were added to the feeble resources of field

[1] See Tarde, "Laws of Imitations," 173–184.

and barn, of garden and stable, and did not, like to-day, replace other domestic plants and animals of almost equal worth. At that time, likewise, every new astronomical or physical observation which lit up some hitherto obscure point in the human mind took an undisputed place side by side with anterior observations which it in no way contradicted." [1]

Every fabric of culture has two sides — one extensible, the other not

Nearly every segment of social culture has a side that admits of accumulation by the union of the new with the old, and another side that admits only of the replacement of the old by the new. When two civilizational spheres — such as Occident and Orient — come to penetrate each other, each can borrow much from the other without experiencing disturbance or opposition of any kind. There comes a time, however, when no further borrowing can take place without discarding something already in hand. At this point begin interference and conflict.

In language the vocabulary goes on enlarging indefinitely, while the grammar soon reaches a point where further growth can take place only by substitution.

Rigid and plastic sides of religion

"Religions also, like languages, have two aspects. They have their dictionary of narrative and legend, their starting-point, and their religious grammar of dogma and ritual. The former is composed of Biblical or mythological tales, of histories of gods and demigods, of heroes and saints, and it can develop without stop; but the latter cannot be extended in the same way. After all the main conscience-tormenting problems have been solved according to the peculiar principle of the given religion, a moment comes when no new dogma can be introduced which does not partly contradict established dogma; similarly, no new

[1] Tarde, "Laws of Imitations," 174.

rite, inasmuch as it is an expression of dogma, can be freely introduced when all the dogmas have already been expressed in ritual. Now, after the creed and ritual of a religion have been defined, its martyrology, hagiography, and ecclesiastical history never fail to grow richer, and this even more rapidly than before. Moreover, the saints and martyrs and devotees of a mature religion not only do not contradict one another in the conventionality and orthodoxy of all their acts, thoughts, and even miracles, but mutually reflect and indorse one another. . . . If the religion is primarily narrative, it is highly variable and plastic; if it is primarily dogmatic, it is essentially unchangeable. In Græco-Latin paganism there is almost no dogma, and since ritual has, therefore, almost no dogmatic significance, its symbolism is of the more distinctively narrative kind. It may represent, for example, an episode in the life of Ceres or Bacchus. Understood in this way there may be no end to the accumulation of different rites. If dogma amounted to almost nothing, narrative was almost everything in ancient polytheism. Therefore it had incredible facility for enrichment." Compare the plastic religion formed thus upon a body of myths with a monotheistic religion like Islam or Catholicism, in which mutually consistent and supporting dogmas and sacraments and rites are so articulated into a solid system that no change can be brought about save in the face of the greatest resistance.

Rigid and plastic sides of science

Science is extensible on the side of observations and measurements, but not on the side of hypotheses, theories, and generalizations. "As long as science merely enumerates and describes facts, sense-given data, it is susceptible of indefinite extension. And science begins in this way

by being a collection of non-related as well as non-contradictory phenomena. But as soon as it becomes dogmatic and law-making, in turn, as soon as it conceives of theories that are able to give to facts the air of mutual confirmation instead of merely mutual non-contradiction, as soon, indeed, as it unwittingly synthesizes the data of sensation under intuitive mental forms which are implicit general propositions called time, space, matter, and force, then science becomes, perhaps, the most incapable of extension of all human achievements. Scientific theories undoubtedly become more complete, but this happens through mutual substitution and through periodically fresh starts, whereas observations and experiments go on accumulating. Certain leading hypotheses that reappear from one age to another — atomism, dynamism (modern evolution), monadology, idealism (Platonic or Hegelian) — are the inflexible frames of the swelling and overflowing mass of facts. Only, among these master thoughts, these hypotheses or *inventions* of science, there are certain ones which receive increasing confirmation from one another and from the continual accumulation of newly discovered facts which, in consequence, no longer merely restrict themselves to not contradicting one another, but reciprocally repeat and confirm one another, as if bearing witness together to the same law or to the same collective proposition."

Rigid and plastic sides of law

Law is extensible on the side of rulings, decisions, and statutes which carry it into special fields or apply it to new classes of cases; but not in the reasoned system of principles which makes up a jurisprudence. A doctrine like that of *ultra vires*, or *caveat emptor*, or contributory negligence, or fellow-servant, cannot be amended in the least without letting loose a hurricane of protest.

The state

Compare also the extensibility of administrative bureaus and functions with the resistance to change offered by organic law and fundamental political ideas. Again,

Industry

the instruments and products of industry can be accumulated, but the scale of wants is modified chiefly by substitution. Consider, for instance, by what hard battles have libraries and universities come to challenge the attention of society, rather than cathedrals like those of the Middle Ages. Think of the struggle that was necessary to create the want that has called into being the splendid gymnasiums and athletic fields in our colleges! Likewise, works

Art

of art multiply, but the ideals that inspire these works cannot be altered without precipitating a conflict of new with old.

The non-accumulable elements are the superior and controlling

Nevertheless, it is the non-accumulable social products that are the more essential. They are governing beliefs, concepts, needs, aspirations, which are to the accumulable products what form is to matter. The genius of a language is in its grammar, not its vocabulary; the core of religion is in its dogmas or ideals, not its myths and observances; the kernel of science is its laws and theories, not its observations. Law means a system of principles, not a mass of rulings or statutes. The art of an epoch means a group of harmonious reigning ideals, not the accumulation of poems and paintings. Says Tarde: "Is it true that the sides of social thought and conduct that cannot be indefinitely extended (grammars, dogmas and theories, principles of justice, political policy and strategy, morals and æsthetics) are less worth cultivating than the side that can be indefinitely extended (vocabularies, mythologies, and descriptive sciences, customs, collections of laws, industries, systems of civil and military administration)?

"On the contrary, the side open to substitution, that which after a certain point cannot be extended, is always the more essential side. Grammar is the whole of language. Theory is the whole of science, and dogma of religion. Principles constitute justice; strategy, war. Government is but a political idea. Morality is the sum of industry, for industry amounts to neither more nor less than its end. The ideal is surely the all of art. What are words good for but for building sentences, or facts but for making theories? What are laws good for but to unfold or consecrate higher principles of justice? For what use are the arms, the tactics, and the different divisions of an army but to form part of the strategical plan of the general in command? Of what use are the multiple services, functions, and administrative departments of a state but to aid in the constitutional schemes of the statesman who represents the victorious political party? . . .

Advance on the plastic side much easier than on the rigid side

"Only it is much easier to move forward in the direction of possible acquisitions and endowments than in that of necessary substitutions and sacrifices. It is much easier to pile up neologism upon neologism than to master one's own tongue and, thereby, gradually improve its grammar; to bring together scientific observations and experiments than to supply science with theories of a more general and demonstrated order; to multiply miracles and pious practices than to substitute rational for outworn religious dogmas; to manufacture laws by the dozen than to conceive of a new principle of justice fitted to conciliate all interests."

For this reason, it is usually only the pressure of great masses of new acquisitions that precipitate at last those conflicts in the upper ranges of thought that bring about

More and more, conflicts are precipitated by the pressure of accumulated materials

great changes in the tenor of a civilization. Multitudes of astronomical observations finally make the geocentric theory untenable and the heliocentric theory alone tenable. The minute study of sources regarding an epoch in church history undermines at last the illegitimate ecclesiastical pretensions based on the forged Donation of Constantine, or the spurious Isidorean Decretals. The piling up of innumerable points about the text of the Pentateuch impeaches eventually their Mosaic authorship and discloses the actual history of Israel. An immense number of observations on the order and upbuilding of the earth's strata in the end enables geology to free minds from the spell of Usher's chronology. The ceaseless accumulation of observations and statistics regarding the increase of the unfit will at last break down the dogma of "personal liberty" in its application to the propagation of their kind by epileptics and feeble-minded.

SUMMARY

As culture grows and becomes articulated the new is more and more liable to interfere with the established.

Nevertheless every fabric of culture is plastic in some respects and rigid in other respects.

Religion is plastic so far as it remains myth but resistant so far as it has become dogma.

Science can be readily extended on the side of data, but not on the side of law, generalization, and theory.

It is easy to discriminate or extend the application of legal principles; but it is hard to introduce a new legal principle.

Growth is easier on the plastic than on the resistant side of a culture fabric; but in every case the latter is the superior and controlling side.

EXERCISES

1. Why is it that only the higher religions resist free inquiry?

2. What should be the chief basis of religious fellowship — agreement in belief or agreement in ideal? Why?

3. Differentiate the plastic and the rigid sides of botany, of psychology, of economics.

4. Is it better to assail a false dogma or to undermine it by marshalling and interpreting the adverse facts?

5. Show different ways of proceeding against such dogmas as "Art for art's sake," "Measures, not men," "The home is woman's sphere."

CHAPTER XXI

COMPROMISE

RETURNING now to the conflict mode of advance, we note that often it is necessary, before a conflict has reached its natural termination, for a group to take collective action or to assume a collective attitude on the matter. These premature decisions, these *ad interim* attitudes, involve the phenomena of *compromise.*

Compromise occurs only in matters which call for collective action

Only in certain fields is it needful thus to anticipate the natural issue of a duel, to forestall, as it were, the social verdict. Occasion for compromise does not appear in the struggle between steam and sail, fashion and rational dress, homeopathy and allopathy, romanticism and realism. In such cases the issue is decided by numberless individual hesitations and decisions. But where collective action of some sort is imperative — whether it be the revision of its polity or creed by a church, the drawing up of its demands by a labor organization, the formulating of an opinion by a scientific body, or the framing of a policy by government — discussion will be fierce and compromise will be frequent, owing to the fact that the disapproving minority is bound by the group action as well as the approving majority. It is the anxiety of elements or sections in the commonwealth lest they be overridden by an undesired collective policy, that lends such heat and virulence to political discussion. It is their energy of remonstrance and reprisal in such event that makes compromise a charac-

teristic form of political action. Thus, the equal suffrage principle is compromised by giving the ballot to women in municipal elections, or to tax-paying women only. The "saloon" or "no-saloon" issue is, after all, no *impasse* while there are such halfway houses as Sunday closing, early closing, and state dispensary. If debate and compromise are not so characteristic of non-political groups, it is because in these the aggrieved minority may withdraw or secede when the yoke of the majority is too heavy on them; whereas in political groups the minority has no such recourse.

Compromise sometimes breaks a social deadlock

Sometimes compromise is the only solution of an indeterminate discussion, *i.e.*, *a social deadlock*. In a social club, a fraternal order, a trade union, a church, or a nation, two parties may appear, either of which will secede rather than allow the other party to carry its point. The compromiser who in such a case finds some tenable middle ground and thereby averts the break-up of the group is justly hailed as "saviour of society," "great pacificator," "constructive statesman," etc.

Oftener, however, it indicates an unfinished social conflict

Oftener, however, the compromise is not a basis of final settlement, but merely a provisional arrangement pending the completion of conflict and the emergence of a real and definitive social decision. It is a means of securing instalments of truth, justice, or reform, when the full measure is not yet to be had. It is easy to justify it on the principle that "half a loaf is better than none." Nevertheless, compromises that yield no logical resting-place are satisfactory to neither side, and compromisers of this sort suffer much abuse. There is, in fact, a necessary and eternal feud between the agitator, reformer, or man of principle, who is the instigator of changes of opinion

in the group, and the judge, chairman, moderator, party leader, or statesman, who is obliged to formulate a policy for immediate action. The latter, in undertaking to register the social will rather than the will of a party, is bound to reckon with many elements, and must often concede much in order to turn a minority into a majority, or a precarious majority into a safe majority. But the man of principle, who alone has led the fight up to this point, and who alone can carry it on to final victory, cannot but detest the "practical" statesman who mutilates or emasculates his principle or ideal in carrying it out, cannot but regard him as a mere trimmer, weather-cock, place-keeper, policy man. On the other hand, the promoter of a successful compromise does not present it bluntly as "an instalment on account," but as inherently "fair" and "reasonable." In defending his compromise against all comers he is bound to develop faith in it. In the end he will stigmatize the man of principle who criticises it as "extremist," "idealogist," "fanatic." Yet the latter is the spur or gadfly that keeps the social mind in movement and will eventually enable the statesman completely to realize his principle. This cross-firing between these two types of fighter in the political division of the great army of progress is one of those tragic situations that the wit of man cannot relieve.

Inevitable feud between compromiser and reformer

Societies differ in aptitude for compromise. Englishmen reform on the instalment plan and are extremely complacent about it. Says Macaulay:[1]—

English fondness for compromise

"Of all the Acts that have ever been passed by Parliament, the Toleration Act is perhaps that which most strikingly illustrates the peculiar vices and the peculiar excellences

The Toleration Act

[1] "History of England," III, 66–69.

of English legislation. . . . The perfect lawgiver is a just temper between the mere man of theory, who can see nothing but general principles, and the mere man of business, who can see nothing but particular circumstances. Of lawgivers in whom the speculative element has prevailed to the exclusion of the practical, the world has during the last eighty years been singularly fruitful. To their wisdom Europe and America have owed scores of abortive constitutions, scores of constitutions which have lived just long enough to make a miserable noise and have then gone off in convulsions. But in the English legislature the practical element has always predominated, and not seldom unduly predominated, over the speculative. To think nothing of symmetry and much of convenience; never to remove an anomaly merely because it is an anomaly; never to innovate, except when some grievance is felt; never to innovate except so far as to get rid of the grievance; never to lay down any proposition of wider extent than the particular case for which it is necessary to provide; these are the rules which have, from the age of John to the age of Victoria, generally guided the deliberations of our two hundred and fifty Parliaments. Our national distaste for whatever is abstract in political science amounts undoubtedly to a fault. Yet it is, perhaps, a fault on the right side. That we have been far too slow to improve our laws must be admitted. But, though in other countries there may occasionally have been more rapid progress, it would not be easy to name any other country in which there has been so little retrogression.

" The Toleration Act approaches very near to the ideal of a great English law. To a jurist, versed in the theory of

legislation, but not intimately acquainted with the temper of the sects and parties into which the nation was divided at the time of the Revolution, that Act would seem to be a mere chaos of absurdities and contradictions. It will not bear to be tried by sound general principles. Nay, it will not bear to be tried by any principles, sound or unsound. The sound principle undoubtedly is, that mere theological error ought not to be punished by the civil magistrate. This principle the Toleration Act not only does not recognize, but positively disclaims. Not a single one of the cruel laws enacted against non-conformists by the Tudors or the Stuarts is repealed. Persecution continues to be the general rule. Toleration is the exception. Nor is this all. The freedom which is given to conscience is given in the most capricious manner. A Quaker, by making a declaration of faith in general terms, obtains the full benefit of the Act without signing one of the Thirty-nine Articles. An Independent minister, who is perfectly willing to make the declaration required from the Quaker, but who has doubts about six or seven of the Articles, remains still subject to the penal laws. . . . This law, abounding with contradictions which every smatterer in political philosophy can detect, did what a law framed by the utmost skill of the greatest masters of political philosophy might have failed to do. That the provisions which have been recapitulated are cumbrous, puerile, inconsistent with each other, inconsistent with the true theory of religious liberty, must be acknowledged. All that can be said in their defence is this: that they removed a vast mass of evil without shocking the vast mass of prejudice; that they put an end, at once and forever, without one division in either House of Parliament, without

one riot in the streets, with scarcely one audible murmur even from the classes most deeply tainted with bigotry, to a persecution which had raged during four generations, which had broken innumerable hearts, which had made innumerable firesides desolate, which had filled the prisons with men of whom the world was not worthy, which had driven thousands of those honest, diligent, and God-fearing yeomen and artisans, who are the true strength of the nation, to seek a refuge beyond the ocean among the wigwams of red Indians and the lairs of panthers."

A juster view is presented by Professor Dicey,[1] who, after pointing out the prevalence of compromise in ecclesiastical legislation in England during the nineteenth century, goes on to discuss the advantages and disadvantages of the system of compromise: —

Advantages of compromise

"Compromise involving great deference to clerical sentiment has averted the intense bitterness which, in foreign countries, and notably in France, has accompanied ecclesiastical legislation. The position of the Church of England has throughout the nineteenth century been gradually shifted rather than violently altered. The grievances which in 1828 excited the hostility of Non-conformists have been immensely diminished, yet the sentiment even of the clergy has not been embittered by a revolution every step of which they and zealous churchmen have opposed; and whilst, in some respects, the wealth, the influence, and the popularity of the church have been increased, the profound discord which arises from the identification of political with theological or anti-theological differences, and amounts in some countries to a condition of moral civil

[1] "Law and Public Opinion in England," 356–358.

war, has been all but entirely averted. These are the virtues of compromise.

Disadvantages of compromise

"In the field, however, of ecclesiastical legislation the vices of compromise are as marked as its merits. Controversies, which are deprived of some of their heat, are allowed to smoulder on for generations, and are never extinguished. Thus national education has been for more than fifty years the field of battle between Church and Dissent, each settlement has been the basis of a new dispute, and even now controversy is not closed, simply because the law has never established any definite principle. One change in the marriage law after another has failed to rest the whole matter on any satisfactory foundation. Our law of divorce enables a clergyman of the Church of England to cast a slur upon a marriage fully sanctioned by the law of the state. The piecemeal legislation engendered by the desire for compromise, and the spirit which this piecemeal legislation produces, are no small evils. 'The time to do justice,' it has been well said, 'is now.' To do justice bit by bit is in reality nothing else than to tolerate injustice for years."

French *penchant* for symmetry and system. What it costs

The French, more logical and consistent in their political thinking than the English, abhor compromises that flout every principle save expediency, and are apt to insist on applying a remedy in its entirety, if they are able to apply it at all. This impatience with halfway measures produces symmetry in laws and institutions, but excites the bitterness of large unpersuaded minorities, necessitates resort to the mailed fist as a means of procuring obedience to law, and threatens a progressive government with reaction or revolt.

SUMMARY

If common action becomes necessary in matters on which society has not yet made up its mind, a compromise will be struck.

Compromise occurs oftener in politics than anywhere else because in political society coöperation is compulsory.

The agitator and the compromiser are hardly ever the same man because the one is spokesman of a single party, the other is spokesman of all parties.

Agitator and compromiser are both servants of progress, yet each hates the other.

Compromise lessens the rancor of political conflicts, but it may postpone their settlement.

Willingness to compromise ought to be joined to a stubborn loyalty to principle.

EXERCISES

1. Show that compromise in the sense of dissembling one's convictions in deference to conventional views is altogether different from compromise as give-and-take in matters wherein common action is necessary.

2. Show that as classes become distinct and self-conscious discussion fails to bring agreement, and compromise from an *ad interim* arrangement becomes the established method of government.

3. Compare the resort to compromise under class rule with that under popular rule.

4. Why is law enforcement more vital in a government of compromise than in a government by public opinion? [See Ross, "Sin and Society," 136–145.]

5. Does frequency of compromise prevent a government from realizing a particular type or conforming to a set of political principles?

CHAPTER XXII

PUBLIC OPINION

Social irresolution is not the same as individual irresolution

A DISCUSSION that attracts general attention finds its natural issue in a state of *public* (or *social*) *opinion*.[1] The formation of this may best be observed during a discussion that must close at a certain date, *i.e.*, a campaign. A campaign is a social deliberation. This does not necessarily mean general individual irresolution. If nobody had made up his mind, there could be no conflict whatever in the social mind. Says Tarde:[2] —

"Let us suppose, although it is an hypothesis that could never be realized, that all the members of the nation were simultaneously and indefinitely in a state of indecision. Then war would be at an end, for an ultimatum or a declaration of war presupposes the making of individual decisions by cabinet officers. For war to exist, the clearest type of the logical duel in society, peace must first have been established in the minds of the ministers or rulers who before that hesitated to formulate the thesis and antithesis embodied in the two opposing armies. For the same reason there would be no more election contests.

[1] The reader should distinguish *preponderant opinion* from *public opinion*. There is a preponderant opinion as to coeducation, or the legitimacy of the tontine life insurance policy, or the moral effects of religious revivals, but not a public opinion. The latter implies the direction of social attention usually, though not necessarily, in view of some collective decision or action.

[2] "Laws of Imitations," 165.

There would be an end to religious quarrels and to scientific schisms and disputes, because this division of society into separate churches or theories presupposes that some single doctrine has finally prevailed in the previously divided thought or conscience of each of their respective followers. Parliamentary discussions would cease. There would be an end to litigation. . . . There would be an end to the struggles and encroachments of different kinds of law, such as those between the customary law and the Roman law of mediæval France, for such national perplexity means that individuals have chosen one or the other of the two bodies of law."

A campaign is a struggle between groups of convinced men

All these instances of social struggle imply that over a part of society irresolution has ceased. The effort of each party is to destroy the irresolution still remaining, or to create doubt in the minds of those who have gone with the other side. In a campaign the public is like a more or less inert substance placed between two chambers containing different active acids. The acid that eats into and assimilates this substance the more rapidly is the propaganda of the winning party. Sometimes there is a simple acid acting on a homogeneous substance — the communion cup agitation in a certain church, or the policy of withdrawal from the state militia mooted in a labor organization. Usually, however, the substance is heterogeneous, and each acid has a number of ingredients, — arguments, appeals, proposals, planks, — each of which is presumed to be effective with some section of the public. The acid must be complex when, as in a political campaign, the entire public is being acted upon.

Primary impression

The affinities individuals develop are by no means determined simply by the rational balancing of opposing con-

siderations. There is first the factor of prepossession and prejudice. Says Bryce:[1] "Every one is, of course, predisposed to see things in some one particular light by his previous education, habits of mind, accepted dogmas, religious or social affinities, notions of his own personal interest. No event, no speech or article ever falls upon a perfectly virgin soil; the reader or listener is always more or less biassed already. When some important event happens, which calls for the formation of a view, these preëxisting habits, dogmas, affinities, help to determine the impression which each man experiences, and so are factors in the view he forms."

The hierarchy of authorities

This original impression is soon overlaid by a variety of influences of social origin. Nearly every man looks for guidance to certain quarters, bows to the example of trusted leaders, of persons of influence or authority. Every editor, politician, banker, capitalist, railroad president, employer, clergyman, or judge has a following with whom his opinion has weight. He, in turn, is likely to have *his* authorities. The anatomy of collective opinion shows it to be organized from centres and subcentres, forming a kind of intellectual feudal system. The average man responds to several such centres of influence, and when they are in accord on a particular question he is almost sure to acquiesce. But when his authorities disagree, there results either confusion or else independence of judgment.

We might compare the individual to a cell in the social brain knit to other cells by *afferent* and *efferent* filaments of influence. When he influences more people than have the power to influence him, the *efferent* filaments pre-

[1] "The American Commonwealth," II, ch. LXXVI.

dominate; but when he is chiefly a recipient of influences, the *afferent* predominate.

Why, in the course of forming a public opinion, the primary impression, or the element of pure personal conviction arising out of individual thinking, nearly disappears in the process is brought out by Mark Twain:[1] — Why independent judgment is often impossible

"There are seventy-five million men and women among us who do not know how to cut out and make a dress suit, and they would not think of trying; yet they all think they can competently think out a political or religious scheme without any apprenticeship to the business, and many of them believe they have actually worked that miracle. But, indeed, the truth is, almost all the men and women of our nation or of any other get their religion and their politics where they get their astronomy — entirely at second hand. Being untrained, they are no more able to intelligently examine a dogma or a policy than they are to calculate an eclipse.

"Men are usually competent thinkers along the lines of their specialized training only. Within these limits alone are their opinions and judgments valuable; outside of these limits they grope and are lost — usually without knowing it. In a church assemblage of five hundred persons, there will be a man or two whose trained mind can seize upon each detail of a great manufacturing scheme and recognize its value or its lack of value promptly; and can pass the details in intelligent review, section by section, and finally as a whole, and then deliver a verdict upon the scheme which cannot be flippantly set aside nor easily answered. And there will be one or two other men there who can do the same thing with a great and com- Necessity of relying on the expert

[1] *North American Review*, 176, pp. 174–175.

plicated educational project; and one or two others who can do the like with a large scheme for applying electricity in a new and unheard-of way; and one or two others who can do it with a showy scheme for revolutionizing the scientific world's accepted notions regarding geology. And so on, and so on. But the manufacturing experts will not be competent to examine the educational scheme intelligently, and their opinion about it would not be valuable; neither of these two groups will be able to understand and pass upon the electrical scheme; none of these three batches of experts will be able to understand and pass upon the geological revolution; and probably not one man in the entire lot would be competent to examine, capably, the intricacies of a political or religious scheme, new or old, and deliver a judgment upon it which any one need regard as precious. . . . Not ten among the five hundred — let their minds be ever so good and bright — will be competent, by grace of the requisite specialized mental training, to take hold of a complex abstraction of any kind and make head or tail of it.

"The whole five hundred are thinkers, and they are all capable thinkers — but only within the narrow limits of their specialized trainings. Four hundred and ninety of them cannot competently examine either a religious plan or a political one. A scattering few of them do examine both — that is, they think they do. With the results as precious as when I examine the nebular theory and explain it to myself."

Balloting a mode of registering public opinion

The disposition of individual minds to fall gradually into a kind of spiritual organization, in which one may balance ten thousand, explains the importance of the time element in the making of a social decision. The

polling of people on a question when first it comes up brings to light much prejudice, passion, and stupidity. The polling of the same persons after there has been time for free discussion and the maturing of a public opinion, reveals an intelligence and foresight far above that of the average man. It is, therefore, a slander to declare that manhood suffrage equalizes Socrates and Sambo. At its best estate a popular election merely records the outcome of a vast social deliberation in which the philosopher has a million times the influence of the field hand. This collective rumination corrects the ballot-box falsehood that one man is as good as another, and brings it to pass that the decisions of a political democracy may be quite as intelligent as those of an aristocratic society, and at the same time free from the odious class selfishness of the latter.

Class coefficients of value in the formation of public opinion

Although public opinion at its final stage always exhibits the hierarchical structure, this hierarchy of influence need not be identical with the political or social hierarchy, else there could be no popular movements, no peasant revolts, no branching off of humble sects (Dunkers, Doukhobors), no confrontation of classes and masses. A democratic society is characterized by the depreciation of mere social position and the exaltation of the wisdom and competency of the average man. Ultra-democracy presumes the independency of each citizen's opinions, just as ultra-Protestantism assumes that every good Christian will from his prayerful study of the Scriptures have worked out for himself a system of theology. The encouragement of the common man in his own conceit profoundly alters the relation of leaders and led. Contrast the "habitual deference" towards certain classes,

which in England has prevented universal suffrage from working out its normal effects, with the powerlessness of any one class continuously to dominate Australasian or American opinion. Nevertheless, during the decade 1895–1905, a widespread infatuation with the commercial-financial magnates, the so-called "captains of industry," came near to giving this class the control of American public opinion.

Indexes of public opinion

An organ of public opinion is at once an expression of existing views and a factor in further moulding the common judgment. Men like to be on the prevailing side — to go with the view that seems likely to win. Hence, the utterance of an organ of public opinion is at once a disclosure of an existing force and a further force in influencing others. This fact multiplies the organs of expression but confuses their utterances, because every voice seeks to represent itself as that of the greater or at least of a growing number. Newspapers are conventionally organs of public opinion, but too many become advocates and thus cease to be indexes or mirrors. On political questions we can follow the drift of opinion in independent or semi-independent journals — the mugwump newspapers, the non-political press, the religious or literary sheets. In general, an advocate is worthless as an index of public opinion on its own hobby, but on related topics it may be valuable. For example, the utterances of the great anti-saloon organ may be significant and representative on everything save "prohibition."

Published letters, interviews, pulpit and platform utterances, the resolutions of mass-meetings, the views of bodies and associations, — all these are straws indicating the set of the current of public opinion. But, again, the

attitude of associations is not significant on questions connected with their main purpose. The attitude of the women of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union on temperance, or of the American Federation of Labor on an eight-hours bill has no revelatory significance. The sphere of competency of such associations is a group of questions whereon they are not committed, but which they are fit to judge. A resolution of a temperance organization on child labor, of a bankers' association on the Torrens system, of a scientific society on rain-making experiments, is at once index and shaper of public opinion.

The merging of public opinion into social tradition

After an overwhelming public opinion has been reached in consequence of adequate discussion, the subject is dismissed from the attention of society and the conclusion, entering the current of tradition, passes quietly down from generation to generation along with other transmitted beliefs and standards. The settled aversion of our own society to gladiatorial combats, polygamy, chattel slavery, the judicial use of torture, the press gang, the use of flogging in the navy, or the official tampering with private correspondence can be traced in every case to a more or less general discussion, that issued in a principle or maxim or canon that, since then, has been accepted without question.

SUMMARY

The formation of a public opinion is best observed during a discussion that must close at a certain date.

The starting point of the process is the *primary impression* made on individual minds.

The process itself consists in the deepening, modifying or effacing of this primary impression by arguments, appeals, the force of numbers, the influence of authorities, the opinion of specialists, and the example of social superiors.

An election is a means of registering the predominant types of opinion. In the fashioning of such opinion some individuals have had ten thousand times the influence of others.

Universal suffrage therefore by no means implies the rule of the average man.

After a discussion is completed the resulting public opinion, embodied in structure, law, morals, or policy, is passed down through the generations and social attention turns to other matters.

EXERCISES

1. Why is it that the single-idea party becomes a many-idea party when it approaches success?
2. Why should this be untrue in the case of an association formed for a special and limited purpose and not for general purposes?
3. Show how unlike is the rule of public opinion to the rule of the mob.
4. What are the good and bad points in the guidance of public opinion by the "better classes"?
5. What are the good and bad points in its guidance by the moral and intellectual élite?
6. What are the good and bad points in its guidance by the experts?

CHAPTER XXIII

DISEQUILIBRATION

Why an equilibrium is not reached

THERE is, as we have seen, a tendency for the contradictions implicit in the contents of the social mind to find their way to the surface. Conflicts break out, rage, and terminate by the victorious belief or practice entering the stream of tradition and passing down to later generations. Why, then, is there not finally a removal of all incongruities, a settlement of all conflicts? Why should not a culture finally reach a self-consistency such that its elements are in logical accord; such that the various interests in human life and in society receive from it due recognition and fall therefore into a kind of harmony? This, in fact, is just what tends to occur. An equilibrium is perpetually being established, but it is liable to be ruptured: —

The influence of a foreign culture

(1) By fresh contacts with other cultures, effected through conquest, commerce, travel, or improved communication. Thus, after the Romans had achieved a crude and rather rustic culture, it was greatly transformed by heavy borrowings from the superior culture of Greece. After these cultures had come to terms and a rough synthesis had been effected, the mind of the classic world was thrown into confusion by the spread of Christianity, an exotic that had bloomed on the Hebrew stalk. After this great complex of factors had been wrought by theologians into an outwardly harmonious system, a leaven

was introduced from Arabic civilization through contact with the Moors, which resulted in the burst of Scholasticism in the thirteenth century. Two centuries later the Revival of Learning brought on an immense flooding and fertilizing of the European intellect with the Greek culture of the Renaissance. In the nineteenth century the Western mind has received no slight impression from the treasures of Indian literature and philosophy. The yet more recent acquaintance with the Japanese culture is likely to leave lasting results in the sphere of art.

The Western culture now well-nigh planetary

But one outcome of these successive incorporations is that the Western culture now extends to so much of the human race that it can find no other equal culture to mate with. The opportunities for the fruitful marriage of diverse thought-systems appear to be well-nigh exhausted. The little rudimentary or arrested cultures that travellers still light on in out-of-the-way corners can, of course, contribute nothing. The only fecund crossing in prospect is that of Orient with Occident, and there is little likelihood that the reaction of the East upon the West will meet the expectations formed before sociology demonstrated the eccentric and barren character of the Oriental civilization. Equipped with that incomparable instrument, *the scientific method*, the Western intellect will probably go on its way with little heed to what the East offers it. Apparently, the human race is on the verge of a planetary culture that must be fruitful by way of parthenogenesis, unless, peradventure, some stimulating intellectual commerce be struck up with the folk on Mars! The trend toward a vast comprehensive system in which the intellectual product of every people and every epoch finds due recognition and place is evidenced not only by

the reign of the eclectic spirit, but also by the shifting of several branches of knowledge from the dogmatic to the comparative basis, viz., comparative religion, comparative jurisprudence, comparative morality, comparative politics, comparative art, and the comparative study of the family.

Shifting of the social foundations

(2) By mutations in the form or circumstances of society. Growth of population, growth of wealth, altered relations to other societies, the conjugation of societies through conquest or federation [1] react variously upon the articulated body of culture. Which tends to prevail, rural life or urban life? Is local redistribution of population going on? Is selection altering the mental and moral traits of the population? Is population overtaking or falling behind subsistence? Are industrial activities gaining on warlike activities, or *vice versa?* Is the drift towards centralization or away from it? Is wealth concentrating or spreading? These basal demographic and economic changes leave their mark in the higher sphere. One might term it *the influence of the social body upon the social mind.* If, for example, the underlying forces are equalizing, we hear of democratic religion, democratic art, democratic morals and manners and sports and dress and education. If society should realize the plutocratic type, the change, no doubt, would be read plainly in legal philosophy, in moral standards, religion, art, literature, social customs, and institutions.

The afflux of inventions

(3) By the welling up of inventions and discoveries from gifted individuals. Since advance by borrowing is coming to an end, this welling up of happy initiatives from geniuses is the only lasting reliance for progress. What it means to us to-day can be realized by comparing our

[1] See Ross, "Foundations of Sociology," 207–254.

situation with that of the classic civilization. By the time of Hadrian the opportunities for fresh culture-contacts in the Græco-Roman world were practically exhausted. No new ferments were to be found. Lacking the originative spirit, — probably because the superior family stocks were extirpated in the civil and social wars of the Greeks and Romans, — society came to a standstill. Says Seeck:[1] "From Augustus to Diocletian the equipment of the legionary remained the same. No improvement of tactics, no new means of warfare, was developed in the course of three centuries. . . . Neither in agriculture nor in technique nor in administration does a single new idea of any significance come to light after the first century. Literature and art, too, are confined to a sterile imitation which becomes ever more empty and feeble. . . . The Neo-Platonic philosophy and the development of Christian dogma are the only achievements which relieve this era from complete futility."

No prospect of the stationary state

Happily, the Occident is seething with inventions and discoveries, and there is no reason to fear the coming of the stationary state. The fecundity of our time is partly due to the fact that origination, instead of being accidental and haphazard, is becoming regular and systematic. Improvement is now a conscious aim. More and more, organized society furnishes the collections, the laboratories, the ateliers; maintains the investigators, experimenters, and explorers. The technique of origination is coming to be understood. One device is to apply in the backward fields the exact methods that have yielded rich harvests elsewhere. Another is specialization. Another is the focussing of attack on a specific question instead of

[1] "Geschichte des Untergangs der antiken Welt," I, 271–272.

groping. Much, too, is owed to that intellectual commerce and that efficient organization of science by which the find of any one is promptly communicated to all other workers, who immediately make it the basis of operations for a fresh campaign. From Rio Janeiro to Helsingfors and from Cambridge to Madras the assailants of the same problem are coming to an understanding and a concert that constitute them virtually a tract in the great brain of humanity.

The laws of invention

It is in the nature of invention to be individual and unpredictable. Nevertheless, there are certain general truths touching the appearance of even so lawless a thing as invention.[1]

The higher the degree of possibility, the sooner the invention is likely to be made.

Degrees of possibility

The inventions (or discoveries) in a particular field — and often those in different fields — are in a chain of dependence which obliges them to occur in a series. Each ushers in a train of possibles. Now, when no intervening invention needs to be made, an invention may be said to be in the *first* degree of possibility. When it is contingent on another yet to be made, it is in the *second* degree of possibility. And so on. Now, when an invention or discovery reaches the first degree of possibility, it is *ripe*. Thus, after Kepler announces the laws of planetary movement, the discovery of the principle of universal gravitation is in order at any moment. After Galileo has proclaimed the laws of the pendulum, its use in time-keeping needs but a single stride. The electric telegraph is due any time after Ampère's discoveries. The invention of Crookes' tubes brings the X ray into the foreground of possibility.

[1] Tarde, "La logique sociale," ch. IV.

After the discovery of the Hertzian waves, a few short steps bring wireless telegraphy upon the scene.

Degrees of difficulty

The less the difficulty of an invention, the sooner it is likely to be made.

An invention is not an outright creation, but, in most cases, a fresh combination of known factors. Thus, the combination of the idea of the elasticity of steam with that of circular-linear motion produces the steam-engine; of this with the rail — already in use for colliery cars — yields the locomotive. The combination of certain principles in optics with certain principles in acoustics gives the undulatory theory of light. Now, the difficulty of making the combination of ideas for any particular invention will depend upon the number of persons who possess these ideas, and on the frequency in this number of individuals with the intellectual capacity necessary to combine the ideas into the invention. There is no way of affecting the latter condition, for the genius is in no wise a social product; but organized society can affect the former condition. A universal system of gratuitous instruction with special aid and opportunities for those who show unusual power amounts to an *actualizing* of all the potential genius in a population, and is the only rational policy for insuring a continuous and copious flow of inventions. It is hardly necessary to point out that only a stimulating, equipping education can mature geniuses. A régime that prunes, clips, and trains minds levels genius with mediocrity. A schooling devised primarily to produce good character, or patriotism, or dynastic loyalty, or class sentiment, or religious orthodoxy may lessen friction in society, but it cannot bring genius to bloom. For this the prime essentials are *the communicating of known truths* and *the imparting of method.*

How society can promote invention

A lasting equilibrium of culture neither possible nor desirable

Owing to the intrusion of alien elements from the sources just described, an achieved equilibrium of culture cannot last. Sooner or later it is upset and, until the added elements can fall into some kind of harmony with the rest, there is confusion. In Israel, after the era of prophets, a certain system of life and thought was worked out, but, after some centuries, the teachings of Jesus rocked it to its base. By the middle of the eighteenth century a consensus had been reached regarding the tests of the excellence of a literary work. But the canons set up by the Augustans were swept into limbo by the unfettered genius of the Romanticists. The compact synthesis and harmonious adjustment effected by Thomas Aquinas in the knowledge of his age satisfied for a time. But heliocentrism, prehistoric archeology, the geologic record, and evolutionism have shattered it into ruins. Under the old guild régime industry was subjected to a system of regulations designed to safeguard the public interests and the craft interest against the reckless pursuit of individual advantage. But the coming of the factory drew industry to new seats and ushered in a period of disorganization and unrestrained competition.

The contradictions about us are not due to want of logic

Some interpret the incongruities and contradictions visible in our culture as proof of the indifference of the social mind to logic. The inference is wrong. Man's love of logic is only too apparent. The attempt to correct mortal theological error by civil penalty, the Christian countenancing of the African slave trade on the ground that it brought the blacks within reach of the faith that would save their souls, the endeavor to reproduce in roomy colonies the social system of the crowded mother country, the precipitate extension of the franchise to the negro

freedman in deference to the doctrine of equality, the confidence that if a literary education is good for a white race it will benefit non-industrial races, — these show how logic can triumph over humanity and common sense. The contradictions that come to light tend to be eliminated by the desire for congruity which is increasingly felt as a people develops socially. The grammar of a language, a system of theology, a legal code, a political constitution, a philosophy, or a science, though it be the joint product of many minds, exhibits, in most cases, a logical consistency that is astonishing.

They are due to putting new wine into old bottles

If, then, our time is full of contradictions, it is because our culture is not allowed to achieve an equilibrium. The steady afflux of new examples, inventions, and discoveries produces confusion. Our culture is like an edifice that, while it is being torn down piecemeal and rebuilt, unites discordant styles of architecture. Constitutional monarchy, with its figurehead king, who "reigns but does not govern," is plainly an instance of new wine in an old bottle. If the Russian government will not set to work the ice-breaker Ermak — an epitome of exact, matter-of-fact, applied science from a Philadelphia ship-yard — until it has been solemnly blessed and sprinkled by a squad of priests, it is because in Russia meet mediæval faith and modern mechanism. If the Japanese do not see the incongruity of killing their foes by machinery and attributing the result to the intervention of the spirits of their ancestors, it is because only within our lifetime has naval warfare come to be virtually an extra-hazardous branch of engineering. If we Americans are blind to the contradictions between what our schools do and what we expect of them, it is because the old idea of education as book learning sur-

vives into a time when the aims of the school system have greatly changed.

Times of disequilibration give the individual a chance

Nevertheless, a transition epoch is a halcyon time for individuality. For with the growth of the social mind in content it is a question what will be the fate of personal individuality. Will there be more room for spontaneity and choice, or is the individual doomed to shrivel as the transmitted culture becomes huger and more integrated? As that cockle-shell, the individual soul, leaving the tranquil pool of tribal life, passes first into the sheltered lake of some city community, then into the perilous sea of national life, and at last emerges upon the immense ocean of humanity's life, does it enjoy an ever widening freedom of movement, or does it, too frail to navigate the vaster expanses, become more and more the sport of irresistible currents? On the one hand, it may be urged that, as one rises clear of bodily wants and promptings, one's self-determination contracts, one's life is more and more moulded by conceptual rather than impulsive factors; that is to say, by ideas, ideals, beliefs, world views, and the like. The growing preponderance of such factors subjects a man more to his social environment, for these are just the things that are easiest taken on by imitation or stamped in by education. You say the stock of possessions to choose from grows with each generation. True, but nevertheless the incompatible ideas and ideals become fewer, because one of the incompatibles exterminates the other. Consider, moreover, how the diversity in the cultural elements offered one becomes less, owing to the march of adaptation. Spelling becomes definite; idiomatic flexible speech falls under the tyranny of grammar and of style. The dictionary expands, but the number of

Does the ripening of the social mind cramp individuality?

The integration of culture

synonyms declines as meanings become more shaded and precise. A religious ferment emancipates souls, but out of it dogmas soon crystallize and close in on the mind. In time unrelated dogmas are compared and sifted, and the complementary ones are erected into an imposing theology, like that of St. Thomas or Calvin, which from foundation to turret stone offers the believer no option. So from the discussions of jurists emerge general principles which transform a mass of incongruous, even contradictory, customs and statutes into a system of jurisprudence from which inharmonious elements have been expelled, and which utterly dominates the ordinary intellect. Likewise, un-unified generalizations about the external world, each trailing off into the unknown with many inviting paths of suggestion, are integrated and the gaps filled in until there exists a body of articulated propositions called a science; and the generalizations of the various sciences find a still higher synthesis in systems of philosophy.

The diversification of culture

On the other hand, there is certainly a progressive diversification and enrichment of culture which offers one a greater number of options and permits him to indulge his individual fancy. The great variety of sects seems harbinger of the day when there will be as many creeds as there are believers. Science, of course, being a verified transcript of reality, can be but one; but, just as a widening circle of light enlarges the ring of darkness, a growth of the known gives fresh opportunities to speculate about the unknown. The widening scope for the play of individuality is seen in the coexistence in our Occidental culture of a greater number of types of music, styles of painting or architecture, forms of literature, theories of life and conduct. Since these appeal to the needs of diverse

temperaments, it is unlikely that the spirit of unification will bring about the triumph of one over the rest, or their coadaptation into one form. The Protestant will not absorb the Catholic, nor the Methodist the Presbyterian. Italian and German opera, classic painting and impressionistic, lyric and dramatic poetry, realistic fiction and romance, Stoicism and Epicureanism, the "woman" ideal and the "lady" ideal, will persist side by side, because they meet the needs of different people. Just as a developed society partly compensates for the cramping of specialism by offering the individual a greater variety of vocations to select from, so a developed culture affords multifarious opportunities from which each can choose what is congenial to his nature.

SUMMARY

The elements in a culture ever tend toward but rarely reach an equilibrium.

Their reciprocal adjustments are continually disturbed by borrowings or inventions or the influence of social changes.

Our Western culture has become so comprehensive that there are no alien bodies of culture likely to have a marked effect upon its development.

Its future course is likely to be determined by the character of the inventions and discoveries that will be made.

The numerous incongruities and absurdities in our culture do not prove the social mind illogical. They result from the hasty incorporation of new unassimilated elements.

In a time of disequilibration individuality has freer play than in a settled time.

The equilibration of culture means the confinement of the mind in some directions, its emancipation in other directions.

EXERCISES

1. Cite instances of the fruitful application in one field of investigation of methods that have succeeded in other fields.

2. Take a science like chemistry or physiology and describe the system of meetings, bulletins, monthlies, quarterlies, and annuals by which the find of any one anywhere is soon made known to all workers everywhere.

3. Why is little in the way of gift or stimulus to be expected from the Oriental cultures?

4. What requirements have been imposed upon our school system that book learning cannot absolve?

5. Account for the incongruity between the prevalent military notion of city government and its actual character as civic housekeeping. [See Addams, "Newer Ideals of Peace," chs. ii, iv, vii.]

6. Explain why the public resents peccadillos as crimes and treats crimes as peccadillos. [See Ross, "Sin and Society," chs. i and ii.]

7. Is there reason for thinking that the progress of Western culture narrows one's options in believing and judging, but multiplies one's options in doing and enjoying?

INDEX

Abnormal suggestibility, 21–30.
Accumulation, 330–336.
Adams, quoted, 222 n.
Addams, quoted, 111, 112, 114, 147.
Administration, red tape in, 207, 208.
Administrative agencies, judicial overthrow of, 212.
Affinity, 6–9.
Age, of Chinese officials, 219; of revolutionary leaders, 219; of naval officers, 221 n.; of industrial captains, 221 n.; of judges, 222.
Age and conservatism, 217–224.
Allen, quoted, 162.
Americanism, 241–243.
Americanization, of immigrants, 36, 140, 241–243, 315–317; of Porto Ricans, 138–140.
Americans, 210–213, 221, 265, 266.
Amos, quoted, 206.
Ancestor worship, 217.
Animism, 202, 203.
Appetites, infectiousness of the, 125, 126.
Aristocracy, 159–164, 170–172, 189, 194, 281.
Aristocracy of achievement, the, 169–175.
Armenians, 240.
Arrested development, 209, 250.
Arts, the, 287–289, 294, 364, 365.
Asiatic immigration, 265, 266.
Assimilation, 240–243, 315–317.
Association, 3, 4, 11.
Atavism, 198.
Attention, 44, 54, 55, 346, 353.
Authority, 287, 299, 303, 348.

Bacon, 304, 305.
Bagehot, quoted, 37, 199, 209, 234–238.
Barnes, quoted, 220 n.
Baudrillart, quoted, 167, 169.
Beauty, ideals of female, 134–136; pecuniary standards of, 116.
Bent, quoted, 107.
Birth-rate, 265, 266.
Bodley, quoted, 160 n.
Boers, conservatism of the, 150–153.
Booms, 59, 78.
Boscovich, quoted, 317.
Bose, quoted, 28–30.
Bourgeois standards, 111–116.
Boutmy, quoted, 154 n., 210.
Brooks, quoted, 97–99.
Bryce, quoted, 38–41, 100, 155, 191, 232, 238, 240, 244, 267, 348.
Buckle, cited, 224 n.
Burke, quoted, 279, 280.

"Cake of custom," 209.
Campaign, 346–351.
Capitals, 183–187.
Catholicism, 6–9, 162, 320, 332.
Censorship, moral, 126, 133.
Ceremony, 209, 272.
Chesterton, quoted, 118, 131 n.
Children, rights of, 148, 149.
Children's crusade, the, 69.
Chinese, 14, 219, 232, 250, 266.
Christianity, early, 66–68, 183.
Cincinnati mob, the, 55 n.
Cities, mob mind in, 58–61; hysteria in, 87, 88.
City, the, as radiant point, 181–189.
Clannishness, 228, 239.
Classes, 156–164, 351.
Coe, 15; quoted, 16, 27, 52–54, 91.
Collective habits, stability of, 256–262.
Commercialism, 103, 112–115.
Common Law, the, 211–213.
Competition, 255, 256, 262, 288.
Compromise, 319 n., 326, 338–344.

Compromisers, 339, 340.
Conflict, silent, 296–305; vocal, 307–317; phases of, 317–319; evolution of, 319–322; results of, 324–329.
Conservatism, 115, 150–156, 201–203, 209–213, 217–252, 286, 362.
Conservatism and age, 217–224.
Constantine, quoted, 208.
Constitutionalism, 206, 280.
Consumption, competitive, 99–106.
Contradictions in culture, 361, 362.
Control, institutions of, 270–273.
Conventionality, nature of, 110–119; laws of, 121–145; radiant points of, 147–194; compared with custom, 196, 197.
Conventionality imitation, compared with custom imitation, 196, 197, 275–283.
Cook, quoted, 282.
Cooley, quoted, 4, 23 n., 30–33, 175.
Cosmopolitanism, 276, 277.
Country, the, 60, 88, 181–188, 226, 227.
Courts, conservatism of, 210–212.
Craze, the, 65–80.
Creed, evolution of, 205, 320.
Criminal festivals, 258–260.
Criticism, 289.
Crowd, the, 43–64.
Crowd self, the, 54–56.
Cult of progress, 242.
Culture, 330–336, 363–365; the descent of, 157.
Culture contacts, 244–250, 355, 356.
Curiosity, 128, 129.
Currents, social, 1, 129.
Custom, 79, 149.
Custom imitation, characteristics, 196–215; conditions affecting, 217–252; fields of, 254–273; relation to conventionality imitation, 275–283.

Dancing mania, the, 121.
Davenport, quoted, 47 n.
De Lesseps, 127.
Deliberation, social, 346, 347.
Deliberative bodies, 57.
Democracy, 39, 99, 162, 172–174, 189–192, 265, 292, 302, 351, 352.
De Tocqueville, quoted, 189.
Dialects, influence of, 227, 228.
Dicey, quoted, 343.
Dill, quoted, 34, 166.
Discussion, 47, 57, 270, 307–322, 338–340; effect of, 307–311; conditions of, 311–317; phases of, 317–319; evolution of, 319–322; freedom of, 234–238.
Disequilibration, 355–365.
Dollarocracy, 176–179.
Dress reform, 107, 108.
Duration of suggestion, 35, 36.
Dynamic society, traits of, 79, 80.

Ecuador, labor in, 264.
Education, 228, 231, 232, 292 n., 302, 360, 362; higher, 84, 153, 154, 161, 162, 173, 174, 232, 233; formalization of, 208; time element in, 35.
El Azhar, 233.
Élite, the, 5, 8, 192.
Emerson, quoted, 87.
Emotionalism of the crowd, 46.
England, 162–164, 210, 340–344.
Epidemics, mental, 69–74, 121–123.
Equality, 39, 161, 162, 190; the idea of, 193, 194.
Evans, A. J., cited, 230.
Evans, quoted, 66 n.
Example, 305.
Exploitation, 264, 282.

Fad, theory of the, 80, 81.
Faddists, 80, 81, 84, 298.
Familism, 88, 89, 251.
Fashion, 94–108.
Fashion process, the, 99–103.
Fasting and suggestibility, 21.
Fatalism of the multitude, the, 40, 191.
Fatigue and suggestibility, 22–25.
Feelings, contagiousness of, 126–131; persistence of, 266–270.
Ferrero, quoted, 258–260.
Feuds, 225, 226, 266, 275.
Fiske, quoted, 153, 282.
Fixation of attention, 44, 54, 55, 346.
Flagellants, the, 121.
Foss, quoted, 257 n.

France, 160, 160 n., 168, 169, 170–172, 183–186, 193, 194, 343, 344.
Franks, 267.
Free contract, laws "interfering" with, 211.
Freedom of discussion, 234–238, 307–309.
French Canadians, 150, 315.
French Revolution, 219.
Fry, quoted, 122, 124, 132.

Gerard, quoted, 239 n., 255 n.
Germans, 155, 156.
Giddings, quoted, 59–61.
Ghost-dancing, 14.
Godkin, quoted, 310, 311.
Goldziher, quoted, 141 n.
Government, 224, 271, 272, 309.
Gray, quoted, 69.
"Great Fear," the, 73, 74.
Great men, 41, 175, 360.
Greeks, 218, 229, 230, 355, 356, 358.
Guest friendship, 229, 230.
Gurewitsch, cited, 156.

Habits of consumption, 262–265.
Harnack, quoted, 66–68.
Harrison, quoted, 179 n.
Hart, quoted, 308.
Harte, quoted, 314 n.
Hearn, quoted, 101, 157.
Henderson, quoted, 223.
Heredity, compared with custom, 198–202.
Higginson, quoted, 169.
"Historical continuity" school, 203.
"Holy Laugh," the, 52, 122.
Home, influence of the, 230, 256.
Homogeneity, favorable to mob, 60, 61; to craze, 80.
Hospitality, 225, 229, 230.
House life, conserving influence of, 230.
Hypnotism, 16, 26–30.
Hysteria, 16, 22–25.

Ideals, 269; descent of, 158; contagiousness of, 131–136.
Illusion, 324, 325.
Immaculate Conception, 282.
Immigrants, 241–243, 260–262, 315–317.
Improved communication, effect of, 227.
Indians, 14, 150, 153, 154 n.
Individual ascendency, 4–8.
Individualism, 241; intellectual, 90.
Individuality, 4, 43, 44, 90, 91, 181, 227, 363–365; in early society, 38; in small societies, 41; building of, 83–92.
Individualization, 17, 251.
Inequality, the passion for, 97–99.
Interference, 296.
Interpsychology, 3.
Invention, 285, 357–360.
Islam, 244, 245, 269 n.
Islands, conserving influence of, 226.
Isolation, physical, 224–227; linguistic, 227, 228; social, 228.

James, quoted, 43, 110.
Japanese, 157, 158, 196, 356, 362.
Jastrow, quoted, 181.
Jeans, quoted, 221 n.
Jenks, quoted, 202, 217 n., 246, 277, 279.
Jewish Messiahs, 77.
Jews, 228, 241.
Jones, quoted, 58, 78.
Joseph II, 300–302.
Judges, 210 n., 222–224.
Judson, quoted, 214.
Jugglery, Indian, 28–30.
Jumpers, the, 121.
Juvenile testimony, 15.

Keller, quoted, 229.
Kipling, quoted, 218 n.
Kirghiz, 200.
Koran, 233, 238.

Language, 204, 331, 364.
Law, 203, 206, 270, 271, 333, 364.
Laws of crazes, the, 76–80; of conventionality imitation, 121–145.
Lawyers, 223, 224.
Leadership, 6, 8, 32, 33, 46, 47, 57, 192, 291, 348–351.
Le Bon, quoted, 127, 207.
Legal procedure, 206.

Lemaitre, quoted, 208.
Literacy, effect of, 231.
Loyalty, 266, 267.

McMaster, quoted, 50–52.
Macaulay, quoted, 340–343.
MacGahan, quoted, 200.
Mahaffy, quoted, 182, 225.
Mahan, quoted, 194.
Maine, quoted, 199, 278.
Majorities, as radiant point, 189–192.
Mammon worshippers, 112–114, 175–179.
"Man of action," the, 127.
Manual labor, stigma on, 111, 112.
Mark Twain, quoted, 349.
Marriage, 147, 148, 287.
Martyrdom, 303, 304.
Maspero, quoted, 204.
Mead, quoted, 262.
Measurement, 288.
Merit, 297–299.
Mexico, labor in, 263.
Migration, effect of, 243.
Migration mania, 73.
Mill, quoted, 271.
Millerism, 70.
Miracles, 27, 28.
Missionary work, 36.
Mob, the, 49–61.
Mob folk, 83, 86, 87, 92.
Mob mind, 63–81; prophylactics against, 83–92.
Monarchy, 184, 302.
Morality, 56, 90, 273, 275, 276, 277, 293.
Morris, quoted, 247–250.
Moss, quoted, 105 n.
Mott, quoted, 35, 36.
Mountains, conserving influence of, 225–227.
Münsterberg, quoted, 173, 242 n.

Nation, Mrs., 71.
National drinks, 125.
National gestures, 123.
Nationalism, 187, 276, 277.
New England, 154.
Newspaper, the, 85, 86, 231, 352.
Nicolay and Hay, quoted, 75, 76.
Nitobe, quoted, 158.
Nordau, quoted, 22–25.
Normal suggestibility, 18–27.
Numbers, influence of, 40, 41.

Obedience, 33, 34, 136, 297.
Old men, conservatism of, 217–224.
Onomatopœia, 124, 125.
Oriental civilization, 209, 356.
Origination, 285, 357–360.
Ornament, 96, 97.
Ownership of property, 89.

Palmer, quoted, 149, 160 n.
Panics, financial, 59, 76.
Paradox, 324, 325.
Paragraphesis, 86.
Parents, influence of, 33, 197, 198.
Paris, 183–186.
Pecuniary civilization, 175–179.
Pecuniary success, 112–115.
Persecution, 241, 303–305.
Pittsburg, 176 n.
Plutocracy, 175–179, 357.
Polemic, theory of the, 313.
Porto Rico, 138–140.
Pound, quoted, 206, 211–213.
"Power," the, 53, 66–68.
Power-holders, as radiant point, 166–169.
Prestige, 30–34, 270–273, 277–283, 288, 291, 296–298.
Progress, 94, 237, 238, 286, 287, 309–311, 357–360.
Protestantism, 6–8, 162, 225, 226, 351.
Provincialism, 167, 179, 184–187.
Public, the, 63–65, 346–348.
Public opinion, secret of, 38–40; rule of, 65; formation of, 346–353.
Pulitzer, quoted, 176.

Quakers, 68, 69.

Race feeling, 239–241, 268.
Race suicide, 266.
Race traits, 3, 13.
Rational imitation, 174, 175, 285–294.
Red tape, 207, 208.
Religion, 1, 6–8, 91, 92, 204, 205, 268, 269, 272, 331, 332, 364.
Revival, the religious, 50–54, 78, 79.

Rich, the, as radiant point, 175–179.
Ripley, quoted, 135.
Ritual, increasing precision of, 204, 205.
Roberts, quoted, 260–262.
Roman emperors, example of, 166.
Romans, 217 n., 355, 358.
Rome, 34, 167.
Roosevelt, quoted, 221 n.
Rules of Order, the, 57.
Rural community, mob mind in the, 60, 61.
Russian imperialism, 240, 241.

Sabbathai Zevi, 77.
Sacred books, influence of, 238.
Saxons, of Transylvania, 239 n., 255 n.
School, the, 231, 232.
Schreiner, quoted, 151–153.
Science, 157, 289–294, 317–319, 321, 332, 333, 358, 361, 364.
Sedentariness, conservative influence of, 243.
Seeck, quoted, 358.
Self, the, 26, 27, 43, 44.
Self-individualization, 96–100.
Sex appetite, the, 126.
Sex charm, 134–136.
Sex relations, 268.
Sexes, unequal suggestibility of, 16, 17.
Shakers, 66, 67.
Shakespeare, quoted, 19–21.
Sheffield, quoted, 219, 232, 250.
Sidis, quoted, 26, 43, 45, 48, 72, 77.
Slavery, 5, 6, 287, 308, 315, 328, 361.
Smart set, the, 177, 178.
Smith, cited, 211 n.
Snobbery, 97–99, 116, 162–164.
Social ascendency, 4–8.
Social cause, 1, 3.
Social current, 1, 2, 129.
Social gravity, 147–164.
Social plane, 1–3.
Social psychology, nature and scope, 1–9; differentiated from sociology, 2; usefulness, 3, 4; divisions, 4–6.
Sociology, relation to social psychology, 2.
Sombart, quoted, 104–106.
Specialization, 327, 328, 349, 358.
"Spirit," the, 66–68.
"Spirit of the age," the, 118, 119.
Sports, 86, 87.
Stampedes, 73.
Standard of living, 262–266.
Starr, quoted, 97.
State, the, 206, 224, 246, 250, 334, 338, 344, 351.
Stephens, quoted, 73, 74.
Stimulants, use of, by women, 117, 118.
Stoicism, 149, 225, 226.
St. Simon, quoted, 168.
Successful, the, as radiant point, 169–175.
Suggestibility, 11–41; in the crowd, 43–55; in city and country, 60, 61, 87, 88; in the early church, 66–68; in mediæval society, 69, 70.
Sumptuary laws, 101, 102.
Superior, the social, as radiant point, 147–164, 193, 194.
Superstition, 292 n.
Survivals, theory of, 142, 143, 254, 256.

Taine, quoted, 170–172, 184–186.
Talk, 310, 311.
Tarde, quoted, 37, 129, 136, 143, 159, 168, 183, 193, 320–322, 330–335, 346.
Tarde's law, 137.
Taylor, quoted, 6.
Teacher, the, 85, 231.
Temperament, 15, 324.
Theological controversy, 313.
Theology, 291, 313, 317–319.
Thomas, quoted, 17.
Tiflis, 135, 240.
Time element, in suggestion, 35, 36; in formation of mob, 49; in development of craze, 76; in fashion, 104–106; in formation of public opinion, 346–348, 350, 351.
Toleration, 236, 241, 308.
Toleration Act, the, 340–343.
Trade union, 315–317.
Tradition, 8, 196–252, 269, 353.
Traditionalism, 199–203, 227, 228, 231–233, 238–241, 243, 251.
Traditional society, 275.
Transcaucasia, 240.

Tulip mania, the, 71–73.
Turks, 245.

Uniformity, psychic, 1–9.
Union, logical, 330–336.
Universities, 173, 174, 182, 232, 233, 334.

Veblen, quoted, 95, 102, 115, 116, 117, 134.
Verification, 290.
Volitions, contagiousness of, 136.
Volume of suggestion, 37–41.
Voluntary associations, 90.
Voluntary movement, and suggestibility, 43, 44.

Walker, quoted, 243 n.
Wants, the descent of, 156.
Ward, quoted, 245, 246.
Warfare, effect of, 245–250.
War spirit of '61, the, 75, 76.
Watterson, quoted, 177.
Weil, quoted, 263.
Wesley, quoted, 122 n.
"Western" spirit, the, 214.
White, quoted, 291 n., 304, 319 n.
Witchcraft, 37, 311.
Woman, conservatism of, 230.
Womanliness, standards of, 117, 118.
Women, 16, 17, 134–136, 319.
Women's Crusade, the, 71.
Workingmen's standards, 111–115.
Wright, quoted, 315–317.

Yogi, 28–30.

By EDWARD A. ROSS

Professor of Sociology in the University of Wisconsin, formerly of the University of Nebraska.

SOCIAL CONTROL

A Survey of the Foundations of Order.

Part I. The Grounds of Control.
Part II. The Means of Control.
Part III. The System of Control.

The author seeks to determine how far the order we see about us is due to influences that reach men and women from without, that is, social influences. His thesis is that the personality freely unfolding under conditions of healthy fellowship may arrive at a goodness all its own, and that order is explained partly by this tendency in human nature and partly by the influence of social surroundings. The author's task, therefore, is first to separate the individual's contribution to social order from that of society, and second, to bring to light everything that is contained in this social contribution.

FOUNDATIONS OF SOCIOLOGY

The Scope and Task of Sociology — The Sociological Frontier of Economics — Social Laws — The Unit of Investigation in Sociology — Mobmind — The Properties of Group-Units — The Social Forces — The Factors of Social Change — Recent Tendencies in Sociology — The Causes of Race Superiority — The Value Rank of the American People.

The author lays a foundation for a social science that shall withstand the severest tests, and formulates the principal truths about society. In the belief that the time is past for one-sided interpretations of society, the effort is made to group together and harmonize the valuable results of all the schools.

Both the above are in "The Citizen's Library" of Economics, Politics, and Sociology, edited by Richard T. Ely, Ph.D., LL.D., Professor of Political Economy, University of Wisconsin.

Each, cloth, 12mo, leather back, $1.25 net

Published by

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

Sixty-four and Sixty-six Fifth Avenue, New York

WORKS ON SOCIOLOGY AND BOOKS OF RELATED INTEREST

Outlines of Sociology

By Prof. LESTER F. WARD.

Cloth, 301 pages, 12mo, $2.00

A sketch of the broad outlines of sociology intended to bring out its true character.

The Principles of Sociology

An Analysis of the Phenomena of Association and of Social Organization.

By FRANKLIN H. GIDDINGS, Professor of Sociology in Columbia University.

Cloth, xxvi+476 pages, 8vo, $3.00 net

The Theory of Socialization

A Syllabus of the Principles of Sociology.

By Professor FRANKLIN H. GIDDINGS. For the use of College and University Classes. With References to "The Principles of Sociology."

Paper, 61 pages, 8vo, $0.60 net

The Elements of Sociology

By Professor FRANKLIN H. GIDDINGS. A scientific and reasonably complete statement of sociological theory for the use of students.

Cloth, 353 pages, 12mo, $1.10 net

Readings in Descriptive and Historical Sociology

Edited by FRANKLIN H. GIDDINGS.

Cloth, 553 pages, 8vo, $1.60 net

Inductive Sociology

A Syllabus of Methods, Analysis and Classifications, and Provisionally Formulated Laws.

By Professor FRANKLIN H. GIDDINGS.

Cloth, 302 pages, 8vo, $2.00 net

Pure Sociology

A Treatise on the Origin and Spontaneous Development of Society. By LESTER F. WARD, LL.D., Professor of Sociology in Brown University. New York. First Edition, 1903; Second Edition, 1907.

Cloth, 606 pages, 8vo, $4.00 net

Text-Book of Sociology

By J. Q. DEALEY, Associate Professor of Social and Political Science in Brown University, and Prof. LESTER F. WARD. New York, 1905.

Cloth, 326 pages, 12mo, $1.30 net

The Elements of Sociology

By FRANK W. BLACKMAR, Professor of Sociology and Economics in the University of Kansas. New York, 1905.

Half leather, 454 pages, $1.25 net

ON SOCIALISM

Socialists at Work

By ROBERT HUNTER, Author of "Poverty."

Cloth, 12mo, $1.50 net

"It is a very remarkable book. I know of no other comparable source of information about the history and present condition of the Socialist movement around the world. It is not only wonderfully complete but wonderfully interesting. The style is admirable, so calm and convincing and reasonable that I should think even those that have no sympathy with Socialism would find it an attractive work and for all sociologists it is invaluable. I should like to congratulate Mr. Hunter and you." — CHARLES EDWARD RUSSELL.

New Worlds for Old

By H. G. WELLS. *Cloth, $1.50*

The *Boston Herald* says editorially that the value of the book lies in the fact that it reflects the point of view of a man with a vision, who is also enough of a socialist and an evolutionalist to know that the process of realizing it must be one requiring infinite patience.

Socialism: A Summary and Interpretation of Socialist Principles.

By JOHN SPARGO. New York, 1906.

History of Socialism

By THOMAS KIRKUP. London. First Edition, 1892. Third Edition, 1906. *Cloth, 364 pages, 8vo, $2.25 net*

THE CITIZEN'S LIBRARY OF ECONOMICS, POLITICS AND SOCIOLOGY

Under the General Editorship of RICHARD T. ELY, Ph.D., LL.D, Director of the School of Economics and Political Science; Professor of Political Economy at the University of Wisconsin. 12mo. Half leather. $1.25 net, each

MONOPOLIES AND TRUSTS. By RICHARD T. ELY, Ph.D., LL.D.
OUTLINES OF ECONOMICS. By RICHARD T. ELY, Ph.D., LL.D., author of "Monopolies and Trusts," etc.
THE ECONOMICS OF DISTRIBUTION. By JOHN A. HOBSON, author of "The Evolution of Modern Capitalism," etc.
WORLD POLITICS. By PAUL S. REINSCH, Ph.D., LL.B., Professor of Political Science, University of Wisconsin.
ECONOMIC CRISES. By EDWARD D. JONES, Ph.D., Junior Professor of Commerce and Industry, University of Michigan.
GOVERNMENT IN SWITZERLAND. By JOHN MARTIN VINCENT, Ph.D., Associate Professor of History, Johns Hopkins University.
POLITICAL PARTIES IN THE UNITED STATES, 1846-1861. By JESSE MACY, LL.D., Professor of Political Science in Iowa College.
ESSAYS ON THE MONETARY HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES. By CHARLES J. BULLOCK, Ph.D., Williams College.
SOCIAL CONTROL. A Survey of the Foundations of Order. By EDWARD ALSWORTH ROSS, Ph.D.
COLONIAL GOVERNMENT. By PAUL S. REINSCH, Ph.D., LL.B., author of "World Politics," etc.
DEMOCRACY AND SOCIAL ETHICS. By JANE ADDAMS, head of "Hull House," Chicago.
MUNICIPAL ENGINEERING AND SANITATION. By M. N. BAKER, Ph.B., Associate Editor of "Engineering News."
AMERICAN MUNICIPAL PROGRESS. By CHARLES ZUEBLIN, B.D., Associate Professor of Sociology in the University of Chicago.
IRRIGATION INSTITUTIONS. By ELWOOD MEAD, C.E., M.S., Chief of Irrigation Investigations, Department of Agriculture.
RAILWAY LEGISLATION IN THE UNITED STATES. By BALTHASAR H. MEYER, Ph.D., Professor of Political Economy, University of Wisconsin.
STUDIES IN THE EVOLUTION OF INDUSTRIAL SOCIETY. By RICHARD T. ELY, Ph.D., LL.D., author of "Monopolies and Trusts," etc.
THE AMERICAN CITY: a Problem in Democracy. By DELOS F. WILCOX, Ph.D., author of "A Study of City Government."
MONEY: A Study of the Theory of the Medium of Exchange. By DAVID KINLEY, Ph.D., University of Illinois.
THE FOUNDATIONS OF SOCIOLOGY. By EDWARD ALSWORTH ROSS, author of "Social Control," etc.
THE ELEMENTS OF SOCIOLOGY. By FRANK W. BLACKMAR, Ph.D., Professor of Sociology and Economics in the University of Kansas.
COLONIAL ADMINISTRATION. By PAUL S. REINSCH, Ph.D., LL.B., author of "Colonial Government," "World Politics," etc.
INTRODUCTION TO BUSINESS ORGANIZATION. By S. E. SPARLING.
INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF AGRICULTURAL ECONOMICS. By H. C. TAYLOR.
NEWER IDEALS OF PEACE. By JANE ADDAMS.
SOME ETHICAL GAINS THROUGH LEGISLATION. By MRS. FLORENCE KELLEY.
THE SPIRIT OF AMERICAN GOVERNMENT. By J. A. SMITH.
INTERNATIONAL COMMERCIAL POLICIES. By GEORGE MYGAT FISK, Ph.D.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

64-66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK

Date Due			
My 10 '39			
N 11 '41			
D 17 '42			
JY 30 '54			
[redacted]			
[redacted]			

HM251 .R82
Social psychology, an outline and source
Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library
1 1012 00025 2355